



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

B.

500 .1 x .411.



SIR EDWARD SEAWARD'S NARRATIVE

OF HIS SHIPWRECK,

AND CONSEQUENT

DISCOVERY OF CERTAIN ISLANDS IN THE CARIBBEAN SEA :

WITH A DETAIL OF

MANY EXTRAORDINARY AND HIGHLY INTERESTING EVENTS IN HIS LIFE,

FROM THE YEAR 1733 TO 1749,

AS WRITTEN IN HIS OWN DIARY.

EDITED BY MISS JANE PORTER.



IN THREE VOLUMES. — VOL. II.

LONDON:

LONGMAN, REES, ORME, BROWN, AND GREEN,

PATERNOSTER-ROW.

1831.

265.

LONDON :
Printed by A. and E. Spottiswoode,
New-Street-Square.

CONTENTS OF VOL. II.

CHAPTER I.

Seaward and his wife arrive at Kingston, Jamaica.—
Lands his treasure.—Takes leave of the Virginian
captain.—Lodges at a *brown lady's*.—A new
fashioned dress, necessary for going into society.—
He orders masts and sails, to refit the wrecked brig
at the islands.—Measures to send a large portion
of his wealth to England.—Visits Port Royal.—
The Solebay frigate.—Engages a crew for the brig.—
A wife for one of his faithful blacks.—A fine lugger-
boat, and a schooner, purchased.—A cargo for Sea-
ward Islands.—Commission as their Captain-com-
mandant.—A slave mart.—Francis Drake takes the
command of the schooner, called the Porghee.
—Seaward and his wife discourse on their great
possessions.—Final arrangements for returning to
the islands - - - 1

CHAP. II.

Difficulty of approach to the islands.—Reception on
their arrival.—A cannon mounted on the promon-
tory.—The wreck refitted sails for Honduras.—
Subsequent occurrences.—How the people are em-
ployed during the May rains.—Fair weather.—A
plantation commenced on the western island.—
Drake makes a survey and chart of both.—Pleasant

excursion to the new plantation.—Description of the plantation bay.—Drake's scheme for taking turtle to the Kingston market.—Sheep-pasture bay.—Suggestion of Mrs. Seaward, to draw some of their English relatives to the settlement.—She names the two islands; calling that on which they first landed, St. George's Island; and the other, Edward's Island.—The Porghee ready for sea.—Drake's commission, with the earnings of the people - 53

CHAP. III.

The Porghee sails for Jamaica.—Active proceedings at the settlement.—Lots given on Edward's Island.—Drake returns.—Brings letters, and new negroes.—Seaward suspected to be a pirate.—Buildings commenced at the Peccaries' Field.—Last encounter with the old inhabitants.—Seaward and Eliza visit the Cocoa-nut Grove—Her appeal to his feelings on a subject of humanity - - - 93

CHAP. IV.

An English brig seen off the southern channel.—Meeting with Seaward's brother, and Eliza's sister, who come out married.—Stores sent to Seaward by his uncle at Bristol.—His surmises as to the source of his nephew's riches.—The English brig departs for Honduras.—Seaward takes his brother over parts of the settlement.—A Spanish schooner arrives.—Seaward puts on a show of importance.—Drake sails to Jamaica for artisans, &c.—Peccary Field House finished.—First child born in the islands.—Anxiety for the safety of Drake and his schooner. 113

CHAP. V.

The Porghee, with a multitude of people on board — Embarrassment to lodge them. — Woodcutters employed in clearing lands. — A retreat for the wild pigeons. — Marriages and baptism. — Military training. — Practicul ideas on slavery. — A Spanish merchantman. — Seaward gives up trading to his brother, Mr. James Seaward, and makes him a present of Peccary Field House. — A Spanish schooner and another vessel arrive. — Parade on the occasion — Interview with the Spanish commander. — An aqueduct, and several improvements, planned. — Seaward determines to visit England. — Arrangements with this object. — Embarks for Jamaica, with his wife and little dog - - - 144

CHAP. VI.

Arrive at Kingston. — Sail for London. — The Thames. — The Custom-house. — Osborne's hotel. — A banker's wife. — Seaward and his wife dress *à la mode*. — A young Frenchwoman. — Mr. Perry, the head of the banking firm. — A dinner party. — Seaward engaged in his affairs. — Attempt to persuade Mrs. Seaward to enter fashionable life. — Seaward and Sir Robert Walpole. — The Minister's secretary. — Extraordinary disclosures. — Seaward, disappointed, is about quitting London. — Visit from a court lady induces him to delay. — Lady Sundon. — Mrs. Seaward to be presented to the Queen. — Seaward's second audience with Sir Robert Walpole. — Change in aspects. — Mr. Powis. — Various important incidents. — Presentations at court. — Seaward receives the honour of knighthood. — Grant of the two islands, with the rank of Governor and

Commandant. — Visit to the Tower of London. —
 Private anecdotes of the family and court of George
 II. — Sir Edward and Lady Seaward prepare to
 leave London for Gloucestershire. - 184

CHAP. VII.

Farewell visit to St. James's. — Journey. — Oxford. —
 Blenheim. — Cheltenham. — Gloucester. — Their
 native village. — Meeting with their relations and
 friends. — The old tree. — The parish church. — Visit
 to Bristol. — Seaward's uncle. — Mademoiselle Rosa-
 lie. — Treaty with a Scotch medical man. — Dines at
 the Mayor of Bristol's. — Ladies' splendid dresses. —
 Statue of William III. — Return to Awbury. —
 Letters from the Queen and the secretary of state.
 Germans to be sent to Seaward Islands - 273

CHAP. VIII.

Christmas at Awbury. — Sir Edward purchases the
 Hartland estate. — Correspondence with the Queen
 on the escape of his Majesty. — Germans sail for the
 islands. — Seaward receives his iron treasure-chest
 from London. — A clergyman engaged for the set-
 tlement. — His account of John Wesley. — Sir Ed-
 ward's generous arrangements at Awbury and
 Hartland. — Settles his affairs at Bristol. — Embarks
 with his lady, and his sister Maria, with others, in
 the Hero, for Jamaica. - 305

CHAP. IX.

Reflections on shipboard. — Madeira. — Antigua. —
 Arrive at Jamaica. — Meet Drake and his crew.
 — Visit Governor Trelawney. — Commodore Gun-

man. — The old seaman's conversation with Lady Seaward. — Spanish Town. — Sir Charles Price. — The Porghes made a King's ship. — Drake's commission as a lieutenant in the R. N. — Visit to Commodore Gunman. — The Decoy. — Letters to the Queen, the minister, and Lord Harrington. — Kingston church on a Sunday. — Sir Edward and his suite sail from Jamaica, in company with the Shark, a ship of war. — Arrive off Seaward Islands. 328

SIR EDWARD SEAWARD'S

NARRATIVE.

CHAPTER I.

WE kept our eyes upon our island home, while any trace of it could be seen. As the vessel proceeded on her course, it became less and less apparent, gradually sinking in the wave; still something appeared like a small cloud on the horizon, when suddenly, and unperceived by us, the sun went down, and I saw the little speck no more. On the instant my Eliza and myself felt as when some dear friend passes away beneath your eye to the world of spirits. We took each other's hand in silence, and sat down upon the deck. Here my sweet partner was not slow to cheer me with blissful words, while the thoughts that gave them utterance warmed her own bosom. Thus cheered we arose, and as she talked I seemed to forget all but what I then heard and saw. It was a peerless night — the azure canopy, studded with a thousand stars, appeared in transcendant loveliness above us, while my own embodied angel leaned on my

arm, discoursing of joys unsusceptible of alloy, whose fountain is higher than the heavens.

During the greater part of the night we walked the deck; and when we descended to our cabin, we left the captain in full expectation of being able to fetch the west end of Jamaica without making a tack, if the wind should continue steady.

On the following day the breeze was not so favourable, but at the expiration of a week we made the high land above Bluefields. From hence we beat up to windward, taking advantage of the land wind by night; and on the tenth day from taking our departure from the islands, the schooner dropped anchor at Kingston, as near as possible to Mr. Dickinson's wharf. I now took my pistols from my belt, being again within the circle of old England's protective rights. This was on Wednesday, the 12th day of March.

I lost no time in writing a note to Mr. Dickinson, and despatched Purdy with it: he soon returned with a clerk of the store, who told me Mr. Dickinson was dead; but that his employer, Mr. Green, who now occupied the premises, had a good deal of Mr. Dickinson's business, and would be happy to do any thing for me I should wish. I answered him that I had some boxes of money to put in safe charge; and that I would thank him to take a house, or commodious lodgings for myself, my wife, and two servants, as near the water as possible, for the better accommodation of business. After receiving his promise to execute my wishes immediately, I added that I would remain on board until he had accomplished the object, when

the schooner should haul to his employer's wharf and land the money. I sent Purdy with him, and in about an hour they returned. He had taken lodgings for me in King Street, not very far up, and if I pleased I might have all the house but one room, which the owner of the house, a brown lady, desired to reserve for herself. The schooner was now hauled to the wharf, and in about an hour all the boxes were landed. When done, I gave each of the crew a dollar, for which they were very thankful; and I told the captain to call on me before sun-set, and I would pay him his freight. The boxes with the treasure, as well as our trunks and cot, were removed from the vessel to our lodgings with my usual caution; and seeing ourselves, with our faithful little dog, and our heavy care, all together here in safety, we felt grateful to God for his continued protection.

The good woman of the house undertook to provide dinner and every thing else we might require, at a moderate charge; and as there were but three sleeping rooms besides her own, with a front and back dining-room or hall, I took the whole house; not choosing to have any stranger companions admitted. While dinner was getting ready, it occurred to me to procure change for twenty doubloons to pay the captain; for as he supposed my boxes to contain dollars (which I knew from two or three guesses he made during the passage), I judged it prudent not to set his surmises agoing by paying him in gold. I therefore went out and changed my twenty doubloons for three hundred and twenty dollars; the exact sum I had to give him; viz.

three hundred for his cabin, and twenty for the two men. He was very civil when I paid him the money, for which he gave me a receipt; and I invited him to take a cigar, sending Diego and Purdy the while to the schooner to bring the hen-coops on shore at Mr. Green's wharf, and leave them there until I should want them.

In the course of conversation I asked the captain the value of his schooner, or of such another. His answers were rather equivocal: sometimes he guessed, and sometimes he reckoned; but I concluded from all he said that the hull might be worth a thousand dollars, and the masts and sails, and cables and anchors, &c., worth another thousand. This information was sought, to be a guide to me in my future proceedings. He soon took his leave, hugging the bag of dollars between his left arm and his breast, while he shook my hand with the other. My dear wife was never cordial with him, and said little on parting, excepting that she hoped he would find his family all well on his return.

After he was gone, I sent for the mistress of the house, and told her that my servants would each occupy one of the spare bed-rooms. To this she instantly objected,—“Those rooms were for gentlemen, not for negro men.” — “My servants are not slaves,” replied I, “although they are negroes; and I will take care they shall not sleep in your beds with a dirty skin or unclean linen.” After much talk, among which I said my two friends were black gentlemen, she laughed, and conceded the point, saying, she believed I was only “Johnny Newcome, to be so foolish.” After coffee, my dear

wife and myself were truly happy to retire to our chamber, where a fine large bed, with moscheto curtains awaited us. Our boxes were stowed in the corner of the room, at the foot of the bed ; yet our minds were rather in a hurried state about them, notwithstanding we now felt ourselves and our riches in a place of security ; but it remained for our God to give us that peace of which we felt the want, and which was not refused on offering up our prayer for it before we went to rest.

In the morning we awoke refreshed ; and, during breakfast, I arranged with my dear wife that she should remain at home to keep an eye on the boxes, until I could dispose of the money. But there was another matter, of perhaps equal worldly import, that demanded our consideration. While on our dear little island, convenience and comfort were the only objects in determining the form of our dress ; but I knew we must here conform to the modes of fashion in civilised life (if such monstrous modes deserve to be so classed !)—and myself, particularly, must submit my head to be covered with pomatum and powder. There was no time lost therefore, in sending for a hair-dresser, who promptly came, and as quickly put me under the torture. He rubbed my hair up in front with hard pomatum, till I could scarcely close my eyelids ; and he dusted in the powder, first from the puff, and then from a leathern horn, until he nearly blinded me, having previously appended to my hair behind a large false queue, tied with about five yards of black riband. My dearest Eliza pitied me, and admired the Christian patience with which

I sustained the operation ; but it was to be done, or I could not show my face any where as a gentleman ! My equipment being thus finished, she felt herself in duty bound to permit her fine and abundant auburn hair to be cut, and disposed in curls ; but she would not allow any frizzing or powdering. And in this resolution of natural just taste, I was happy to see her continue during the whole of our stay in Jamaica.

When I was pronounced by Monsieur the friseur as quite the thing, I sallied forth, taking Purdy with me ; leaving Diego to hold guard with his mistress. I called at Mr. Green's store, and found him there. He gave me an account of Mr. Dickinson's death, which happened about six months ago : adding, that he (Mr. Green) had lately arrived from Liverpool, and had taken the store and wharf. I told him my business, was to purchase a schooner of about a hundred and twenty tons burden, and a variety of things to load her ; among which would be a main mast in pieces, fitted, with other spars ; also, a complete suit of sails, for a brig that now lay in a creek, the crew of which had been drowned : and that, therefore, I should want to take with me a captain, and crew of eight, including the mate : and that if he would assist me in these matters, I would pay his commission : to which he readily agreed. I then said, the first things to be set about, were the masts and sails ; and that if he would send a proper person to me the same afternoon, I would give him an explicit order, with the dimensions ; but should trust to Mr. Green for the honesty of the charge. I added, that as soon as he could

hear of a schooner for sale, that might be suitable, I would look at her. "It shall all be attended to," he replied. "Indeed, I understand from my clerks that you are well provided with dollars, so you will find little difficulty in speedily doing the needful." Mr. Green invited me to dine; but I declined his kind invitation, having Mrs. Seaward with me.

After having despatched so much, I returned to our lodging to write a note to the admiral's secretary; which I sent by Purdy, with a person to show him the way to the admiral's penn. I merely stated, that I wished to transmit a considerable sum of money to England, and requested to know if any man of war was soon going, and whether the admiral would order the money to be received on freight. I was soon favoured with a very civil reply; in which it was intimated, that such an opportunity was about to present itself, but that the admiral would not order any sum under ten thousand dollars to be received in charge of any of his Majesty's ships; he therefore requested to know what sum I proposed to remit to England. After giving some refreshment to the messengers, I returned them with my answer; in which I stated, that if the ship were a frigate I would send by her about 40,000*l.*; and as it would be all in gold, the captain would suffer little inconvenience by its bulk. In the course of the afternoon a reply was brought, saying, the admiral's secretary, and the captain of the *Solebay*, would wait on me to-morrow morning.

In the evening Mr. Green appeared with a Mr. Finn, a shipbuilder, (I suppose he may be so called, although no vessels are built at Kingston,) and I

gave him the dimensions of the mast and spars, and sails, &c., and requested he would have them all ready in a fortnight; which he promised to do. After he was gone, Mr. Green staid and took coffee with us, and showed himself so pleased in making himself agreeable to my wife, that he asked me no more about the object of my business than I chose to tell him; which at present saved me some embarrassment. The only thing he communicated of any interest, was the circumstance of a calamitous hurricane having swept over Jamaica last year, on the 1st of September; the very day on which we experienced, at Seaward Islands, four-and-twenty hours of violent rains, with variable winds, and a heavy gale at night.

In the morning, about nine o'clock, the naval gentlemen made their appearance. We were just going to breakfast, in which they joined us with great frankness and good breeding. During our repast they talked a good deal about the creole ladies of Jamaica, and such other light matters as came uppermost. The captain also invited us to visit the Solebay, my Eliza having mentioned her never having seen a ship of war. After breakfast she retired; and we then entered on matters of business. — "I understand, sir," said the secretary, "you intend to send about forty thousand pounds to England in gold, if you have the opportunity of a frigate. Captain James will sail in about ten days: and I privately communicate to you that he goes to Chatham; so, if you wish the money to proceed to London, the opportunity is a good one." — "It will be so, sir," I replied. "And now, gentle-

men," said I, "as a merchant, you must pardon me proceeding in this matter like a man of business, — what is the freight?" — "One per cent., sir," answered the secretary. — "In full of all charges, and considerations?" said I, in return, — "the money being in the captain's charge, until delivered on shore by him, to my order at Chatham?" — "Just so," they replied, smiling; then, after a few minutes' more conversation, they informed me they would duly let me know on what day the money should be sent for; and at the same time a receipt would be given by Captain James; and memorandums exchanged, as to the conditions mentioned. My wife returned into the saloon when the gentlemen were going away. The captain then repeated his invitation for us to visit the frigate; which we promised to do, before he sailed.

This matter being arranged, I sat down and wrote a long letter to my uncle at Bristol; detailing all that had happened to the brig and crew, and with due gratitude mentioning our extraordinary preservation: adding, that fortune had thrown some money into my hands since our shipwreck; and that I had seized the earliest opportunity to get to Jamaica, where I was now providing a mast, spars, and sails to refit the brig; and by the help of some other repairs, and a fresh crew, that I meant to take with me, I hoped I should have her at anchor off Belize in about a couple of months; and that then I would send him a faithful account of all disbursements. — My dear Eliza at the same time wrote most affectionately to her father and sisters, and to mine. By two o'clock we had finished

these long and interesting letters, and had just time to be dressed for dinner, when it was announced.

The dinner was excellent, and my two domestic friends were in attendance. Their apparel might do very well at Seaward Islands, but it cut rather a shabby figure at Kingston. My wife therefore suggested the propriety of giving them three or four white suits each, — waistcoat, jacket, and trowsers, with neat hats. This being settled, the brown lady was requested to send for a proper person to make the clothes; which she did in the course of the afternoon, and by Saturday evening one suit for each was brought home.

I remained with my dear helpmate all the remainder of the day, which allowed poor imprisoned Diego to go out for a walk with Purdy, to buy the different articles they wanted. When they made me their bows on going forth, I gave them a word or two of admonition as to their behaviour, which they promised faithfully to attend to. And I also desired them to be on the look out for such things as they knew I intended to take with me; but as we should be here about a month, there was no hurry beyond getting information, of which we might avail ourselves at a proper time. In the evening I took a cigar with my coffee, which brought back to our minds the many hours of happiness and peace we had so passed in our solitude — unperplexed by cares, undisturbed by anxieties.

Next morning I called on Mr. Green, and told him I wanted to purchase a bill of exchange for one thousand pounds sterling, which I was desirous

to remit to London as a deposit; and I asked him if he could furnish me with a list of the London bankers, as I had forgot the name of the firm I wished to remit the money to, but I should recognise its name on seeing it. He said he would go with me to the paymaster-general, who would give me the bill, no doubt; but there would be a premium on it of ten per cent.: after which we could call at the coffee house, and look over the list I desired. On our doing so, I made a note of Perry, Child, and Co., Lombard Street: having preferred dropping in at the coffee-house, in our way to the paymaster; with whom I arranged for the bills of exchange; and as an extra packet was to sail next day, I begged to have them the same evening: he shortly but civilly answered, that I should have them when I pleased to call with the money. I therefore quickly took my leave of Mr. Green, thanking him for the trouble he had bestowed on the matter, and instantly returned to my dear wife, who assisted me in counting out 300 doubloons from the bag we had placed in the trunk; then turning out the remainder into a stocking, I replaced the 300, and taking the bag on my arm according to the example of our Yankee captain, I went back to the paymaster's office; where he calculated the difference of exchange and premium, and then told me the sum to be paid was 4620 dollars. I said, "That is right, if you take the doubloons at sixteen dollars." — "Certainly," returned he, "if not cobbled." — I produced my gold, which was the proper sort, the cobbled money being unshapely and not milled. I

counted him out 289 doubloons, and he returned me four dollars, being the change; and then delivered me a set of bills of exchange on the British treasury for the 1000*l.* sterling. I asked him what he thought of Perry's house in London, to make a deposit with. "None better," he replied; so I took my leave, returning lighter in weight and in heart than I went, for all these operations were attended with much anxiety.

On my return to our lodgings I refreshed myself with a little wine and water, but the real cheerer was my dear kind wife. I now lost no time in writing to Perry and Co., enclosing them the first of the set of bills, and advising them of a shipment of 12,000 doubloons to be made in a few days in His Majesty's ship *Solebay*, Captain James; which said 12,000 doubloons would be consigned to their house; and that they were to receive them from Captain James at Chatham, paying one per cent. for freight; after which they were to make the best of the market for converting the gold into stock, in the name of Edward Seaward; reserving in their hands 1000*l.* as a deposit to my credit. I also bade them take care of the bank receipts for the money, and to send me their acknowledgment for them, with the accounts, by the first packet, followed by duplicates in the next. This letter being finished, and the bill of exchange specially endorsed, I read the letter to my dear friend and wife as she stood by me, observing to her, "You perceive, my love, I do not order this money to be insured: I commit it to the waves, to be preserved or otherwise, for us, as it may please Him who most

wisely disposes all events for good to those who seek to serve him." My Eliza kissed my forehead, as she hung over my shoulder, to read and listen to the letter, saying in reply, "My honoured husband, we have but one mind in all things."

It was nearly dinner-time, but I hastened off to post the letters; and returned, heartily glad to change my clothes, and then sit quietly down in comfort and security with the sweet confident of my bosom, to enjoy the ample board that was presently set before us.

Diego and Purdy had been out all day, with permission; and after dinner I called them in, to tell me what they had seen, and what they had done. Their recital was highly amusing to us, but too trivial in point of importance, for detail in this place, excepting that they had seen a capital boat or two, and several excellent canoes, to be sold; and Purdy had heard of a new Bermudian schooner, sent to Kingston for sale. I told them I was particularly pleased with this last part of their information, and that next week I would look at the schooner. We retired early to rest, as I was much fatigued; but it was in mind rather than in body. My mind was refreshed, however, by our evening prayer; and I slept soundly, notwithstanding the buzz of musquitos that hovered all night round the muslin enclosure of our bed.

Sunday, 16th. — We made the best shift we could, with a large sponge and the contents of a great basin, as a substitute for our accustomed Sabbath morning's ablution. We then dressed ourselves in our Sunday clothes, which we found

had not become quite unfashionable, excepting my waistcoats; the flaps of which were quite diminutive, and without lace or embroidery; so that I had ordered a couple of genteel vests to be made, one of which I now put on to-day; and the flaps being to the mode, reached half way down my thigh, with pockets sufficiently large to hold a week's provision. At breakfast I received the acknowledgments of our two attendants, in their new attire; and in my own opinion they were much more conveniently clad than their master. We desired very much to go to church, but we thought it prudent not to leave so large a sum of money in a place so insecure; we therefore determined on having prayers at home, and accordingly, in the forenoon, we read the service; omitting the singing of the hymns, as we did not wish to draw the attention of people from without. Our two men attended, and by invitation the brown lady made one of the congregation. Diego was as usual truly devout, and Purdy behaved very well; but our new friend sometimes laughed, and sometimes yawned, and seemed heartily glad when it was over. The heart of my dear wife bled inwardly, at this manifestation of total darkness on the part of the poor woman; and said to me, how happy she should be if it were granted her to be the instrument of bringing that poor soul to the knowledge of God. After service the men had permission to go out, but I enjoined them to keep away from all revelry, and to hold in mind that this day was the Sabbath, to be kept holy to the Lord.

About one o'clock Mr. Green called on me. My dear wife expressed her regret that we had not been able to go to church, but hoped we should have that happiness next Sunday; and concluded by asking him how many churches there were in Kingston? He replied, "One, I believe; but I never have been in it."—"Never in it!" repeated my Eliza, with an emotion of surprise. "O no," resumed he; "scarcely any one here ever thinks of going to church. We have too much to do, and have only just shut up the store." She could hardly believe her ears; for on this subject we had made no enquiry, having on our former visit to the island arrived on one Sunday and sailed the next. Her spirits were a good deal affected by what she now heard; it was a deep sentiment of sorrow for the people. Mr. Green sat a good while, and I thought in that case it was incumbent on me to invite him to dinner. He accepted my civility, and returned by two o'clock. We gave him excellent fare, with which he seemed well pleased; but when at our wine, he ventured to make some satirical remarks on saying grace before dinner, which drew from my dear wife a rebuke that I think he never will forget. "It has been said, Mr. Green, that ingratitude is so base a crime, that the man was never yet found who would acknowledge it. He that omits thanking the Creator and Giver of all things, for the good he receives at his hands, I think fairly deserves the imputation. And this is my apology for that grace before dinner, which you have endeavoured to make a subject for ridicule." Our guest was quite confounded, he could

not make any reply for some time; at last he said, Jamaica has a pestilential atmosphere; and that while in England, he was sure he never would have ventured to say what he had said. My dear wife mildly answered, that she hoped he would not suffer all his early good habits to be destroyed, and that she might see him at church before we left Kingston. To this he gave a smiling promise, and we passed the rest of the evening in general conversation. He left us after tea, or rather coffee, without much regret on our parts at his departure. We soon retired to our Sabbath thanksgiving, and to our rest.

Monday 17th. — I called on Mr. Green early in the morning on business. He very soon alluded to what my wife had said to him, and he really felt much obliged to her; saying, it had made such an impression on his mind, that he thought it would keep him on his guard against the inroads of impiety, which stalked about with unblushing face in every shape at Kingston. After finishing this conversation, I told him I wished him to make some enquiry about a Bermudian schooner that was for sale; and if he considered its price reasonable, and it would suit me, I would purchase it. About noon he sent his clerk to tell me the owner of the vessel was at the counting-house, and if I would go with him I could see it. I accordingly went, and took Diego and Purdy with me. It was a fine vessel, built entirely of cedar, and fully equipt for sea — the admeasurement, one hundred and thirty tons: we were all much pleased with her. The owner, and another person with him, knew Jemmy Purdy; and he

knew them ; but they gave themselves no trouble about him, and he had sense enough to say nothing to them about himself, lest he might be seized as a runaway slave, and put in confinement. After we had looked at the vessel, we returned to Mr. Green's counting-house, and then I asked the price of her. The owner named four thousand dollars ; she was complete, and there were two suits of sails. Comparing this with what the Norfolk man said, I thought the demand too much, and told him so at once ; saying, " I will not give any thing like that sum," and went away. He called on me several times during the week, always coming down a little ; but I would not negotiate with him at all. " What is the most you will give then ?" said he ; " Three thousand dollars," said I, " if the report of a ship carpenter be satisfactory ; and I am content myself with the inventory of the equipment, with which you must furnish me." No, he could not take such a sum as that. But before the week expired, he consented to do so, and also brought an inventory of the equipment. Mr. Finn was sent to examine the vessel, her boats, sails, cables, &c. &c. ; and being well satisfied, a conveyance of the schooner was made ; which, together with the register, was handed over to me, and I paid the seller in dollars ; which I had taken care to procure, not wishing it to be thought my boxes contained any thing more valuable. The vessel now being mine, I told Purdy he must take charge of her ; and I shipped two free New England negroes, at five dollars a month.

On Wednesday morning, the 19th inst. Captain

James, and the admiral's secretary, and the master of the Solebay, called on me; and eight of the boxes were brought out by Diego and myself into the saloon. When they were put down, I sent to purchase a hammer and chisel; with which I soon opened the lids, Diego having quitted the room after they were uncorded. The doubloons were then counted, and replaced, and the boxes nailed up again, and Diego called in to re-cord them. I then delivered them to Captain James; taking his receipt, and signing a memorandum of agreement, the counterpart of one he had signed and given to me. The master went for the boat's crew,—who lugged away the cases of treasure down to the boats in waiting for them, as lightly as if they contained so much ballast. I told the captain the name of the house in London, to which the bullion was consigned; and that I had written by the packet, to advise the firm of the business, but that I should write by him also. He took his leave, again expressing his hope of seeing us on board the Solebay. "You must come and see my little ship," he repeated again; adding with an emphasis, "*My royal* little ship, for it was she that brought King William to England."

Towards the end of the week, I called on the paymaster of the forces again, and asked him if it were convenient for him to draw on the treasury for any sum within five thousand pounds; he replied it was quite convenient, and that I might have a bill for that sum or any other within it. My answer was, that I should prefer taking the whole sum; and would bring the money on

Saturday morning. Accordingly I made Diego, and another man I hired, carry one of the boxes with me to the paymaster's; where I opened it, and untying one of the bags, I drew out twelve doubloons, saying, "Now you will find in this and the other bags, the sum right, if you will give me eight dollars." They then lifted out the bags, and counted 500 out of each of the full ones, and 488 from the other; which being the exact sum I mentioned, the paymaster delivered me the bills, at thirty days' sight on the treasury, for the 5000*l.* sterling; also the eight dollars change; and I took my leave.

In the course of the week I had desired Diego to look about for a large strong wooden chest, to lock up the remainder of the boxes; but he could not find one suitable. I therefore bought an iron chest; into which we removed the twelve bags of doubloons, from the boxes that remained; and also the contents of the big one, of which we now took a correct inventory, viz.:—

Gold:—Crucifixes, thirty-six; sword handles, twelve; chains, large and small, forty; triangular pieces embossed with scripture figures, having a hole at one angle for a chain, eight.

Silver:—candlesticks, two pairs; ewers, two; salvers, four; crucifixes, fifty; chains, fifty; cases with perfume, two; shoe buckles, twelve pair.

Tissue, of gold, four pieces; of silver, six pieces. This being done, we locked the new depository; feeling, as I put the curiously wrought key into my pocket, a great relief to my mind, and to the mind

of my dear wife also. Our thoughts and time were now comparatively at liberty; and we anticipated with delight, the celebration of the Sabbath in a temple dedicated to the service of God.

Sunday 23d. — I sent Diego to the schooner, for Purdy to accompany us to church; and we left *mammon* in the chest, to take care of itself. There were but few people attending divine service, compared with the population of the place; and the greater part of that congregation, consisted of officers and soldiers. We could not but be affected by this awful corroboration of Mr. Green's statement; yet we ventured to hope a day would come, when the Sun of Righteousness should rise on this spiritually benighted land, when both bond and free should join in the worship of the God that made them.*

Monday 24th. — I sent for Mr. Finn, to urge him not to fail in his promise with respect to the spars and sails, and to request he would be on the look out for a captain to take down for the brig, and for some one acquainted with the Spanish Main to command the schooner; and to cast his eye over some of the boats Purdy had mentioned to me, as I wished to purchase one of about twelve tons to take with me. Mr. Finn promised to do all I required.

After he left me, I desired Purdy, who was in waiting, to be on the alert for a crew for the brig, eight hands, and bring them to me as he found

* This pious prophecy of heart, made by this good man nearly a century ago, is happily now verified in the year 1830, by the indefatigable labours of Doctor Lipscombe, Bishop of Jamaica. — *Editor*.

them. — “Yes, sir,” he replied: “I will get crew for brig, but wish to tell you something, sir. You said I should have Jamaica wife to go with us. There is young woman, sir, will have me, sir; but if she go, sir, father and mother, and one brother, want all to go too, sir; I tell them say, sir, can’t marry every one of them, sir.” — “Well, Purdy,” I answered, “bring them all to me; or, bring the father and mother, and I will talk to them.” — “When they shall come, sir?” he asked. — “Tomorrow evening, Purdy,” I replied, “before sunset, let them come.” — “Thank you, sir, thank you very much, sir,” said he; and, making several scrapings with each foot, and a merry turn of both arms, retired. As he went out, Diego respectfully observed, “Good fellow, that, sir; honest fellow, him, sir.” — “I am glad to hear you say so, Diego,” I replied; “for I believe thou also art an honest fellow thyself.” — “Thank you, Senor Don Edvardo; good master to me, and friend! thank you, sir,” said he, with much emphasis and emotion, bowing his head low and slowly to the ground.

“Now, Diego,” rejoined I, rising, and taking him by the hand, “our time draws on; you must be on the look-out for whatever you may think we shall require; remember our family will be increased to at least four times our former number.” — He remarked, in reply, that our stores would be full from the field, soon after our return; but we must take some plantain suckers to put in; and two or three breeding pigs, and a few turkeys, and some geese, if I pleased; and if any thing else occurred to him, he would mention it. — “Very well,” I

said; "bespeak these things, and any thing else you think we may want."

Having despatched all this business, I asked my dear wife if she was inclined to pay a visit to Port Royal, and the frigate: to which she readily assented. Diego was told where we were going, and desired to keep within, during our absence. I added, that we would lock our room door, and if we did not come home that night, he must sleep near it, on the hall floor. My word was a law to this faithful creature; and, bowing his answer of obedience, I despatched him to man one of the schooner's boats with himself and Purdy's crew, and bring it to the nearest wharf, to row us to the rendezvous of the wherries; these are large sailing-boats of eight or ten tons measurement, that ply between Kingston and Port Royal. By ten o'clock, we found ourselves in a wherry; and the breeze blowing strong and fair, they disembarked us at Port Royal in an hour and a quarter. The ships of war looked nobly, as we passed a-head of them, laying at anchor off the town. On landing, we were shown to a lodging-house by one of the wherry men, where we were kindly received by a brown lady who kept it, and by her daughter. The latter came smiling up to us; and, rubbing her white teeth with a piece of chew-stick all the time she stood by my wife, spoke to her every now and then, "How you do, ma'am;—hope you don't sick, ma'am;—hope you get better at Port Royal, ma'am;—season don't very sickly, ma'am."—"I am very well, thank you," replied my Eliza. "You seem a nice girl; you can read and write very well, I suppose?" The

girl tittered; "Read, ma'am! Bucharra read! me no read." — "You sew, then? I suppose," continued my wife. — "O yes," replied the girl; "can sew — but no more than hem handkerchief sometime." — "What do you do, then, with your time?" replied Eliza. — "Plenty for do;" she returned, "all day sit down, and talk sometime." — My dear wife smiled, and the brown young lady resumed the rubbing of her teeth, which was done in a manner not to fatigue her, and walked out of the room with a peculiar movement, that swung her petticoats from side to side at every step.

In a little time the table-cloth was laid, and our hostess told us there was a guinea fowl roasting for second breakfast, and that it soon would be ready; for which we thanked her. In the meanwhile I wrote a note to Captain James, and asked her to despatch it on board the *Solebay*; but she said she had no doubt he was on shore, and would therefore first send where she thought he was; which she did; and in about a quarter of an hour he waited on us, with another captain of the navy, whom he introduced as Captain Denny. Captain James was very glad to see us; and my wife, in turn, received him and his friend courteously, and requested they would partake of our second breakfast. They politely assented; but before we sat down, Captain James sent off a note to his ship. We talked of England and Jamaica, and the Spanish Main; at least, he talked of the latter, believing that we had come from thence with our stores of gold; however, the topics were all lightly touched on, so that there was no embarrassment.

After we had finished our repast, a midshipman came in, to say the barge was in waiting; and Captain James then repeated his invitation to Mrs. Seaward and myself, to do him the honour of visiting his ship. We were struck with the elegance of the boat, and the neatness of the crew, who were all dressed in white shirts, and trowsers like petticoats, and small straw hats. They pushed off the boat in a peculiarly fine style, and rowed simultaneously, with a long interval between each stroke of the oar, the coxswain making a sweep as if he would pass the ship; and, in fact, he did so, for I saw her cabin windows, before he brought the boat's head fairly round. As we approached, the bowman tossed up his oar into the air, and caught it again; while at the same instant all the crew placed their oars regularly within the boat, and she was laid alongside with the greatest ease and exactness. The frigate appeared high; but my dear wife said she could easily get up: however the necessity of the attempt was prevented, for a large chair, fitted for the purpose, was lowered down to the boat, into which the Captain placed her, covering her limbs with a flag, and in one moment, by the signal of the boatswain's pipe, she was hoisted up, and placed on the quarter-deck in safety. The Captain, and Captain Denny, were received with presented arms. He then introduced his officers to us; they were all dressed in dark blue coats, with white linings, but the lieutenants only, wore white facings; some had on gold laced waistcoats with deep flaps, rather the worse for wear; others wore their waistcoats plain, but I observed a rose on all their buttons. The lieute-

nants, and another officer, wore small cocked hats, of a shovel fashion, and they were laced, though somewhat rusty; and more than one of the group flaunted an awkward-looking wig under the beaver. But, without exception, every fighting man of them had a short curved cutlass slung horizontally at his side. I made a few complimentary remarks on the dress worn by the lieutenants, but more especially on that worn by Captain James himself. He said, in reply, that the navy was indebted for it to his present majesty; that it was but a few years ago he had given them the white lapelle, and double rose upon their button: previously the coat was single-breasted, like that of a landsman; the junior officers wearing nothing but jackets, with sugar-loaf buttons, and a bit of gold lace edging the rim of a round hat.

After this ceremony, we walked down into the captain's cabin, which is on the main deck, where he showed us increased courtesy. "You see your cash there," said he to me, pointing to the after-part of the cabin; — "but you perceive," continued he, "I am more careful of it than you were, for I have caused the carpenter to make a great coat of oak plank for each of your deal boxes; I wonder you could trust gold in such trumpery cases." — I thanked him, smiling, saying, "If they were nails, we should think deal boxes safe enough; and perhaps we sometimes add little to our security, by too evident precaution! Still I felt much obliged to him; and I hoped he would not suppose I undervalued my obligation, by the remark I had made." — "No," returned he, with something like

an oath, which rather startled my dear wife; "no, I really think you are right." — And then he told us a story about his smuggling some valuable things, when he came from India as a lieutenant, by merely putting them into a seaman's chest, for which he gave Jack five shillings, and which he sent on shore by a common waterman, directing it to a waggon office in London; where it arrived safe, when all those who bribed custom-house officers, and took every precaution, had their whole collection of things seized the moment they were landed.

Our chatty host now invited us to see the ship. I observed there were some small cannon on the quarter deck, but on each side of the main deck the guns looked nobly; yet I believe they were only nine pounders; the frigate was said to carry twenty-two guns altogether, with a complement of one hundred and fifty men. We were next introduced to the gun room, a deck lower, where the officers live. It was hot and dark, and is below water. Men must have a great thirst for glory, thought I, to live in such a place; to which the cavern in our own dear island, is a palace! We found ourselves very pleasant on the quarter deck, after emerging from that close region; and the awning being spread, we walked under its shade with great comfort, the cool breeze from the sea blowing freshly over us. The ships, and the scenery around, were all objects interesting to our reflective minds. A-head of us, were the remains of a once proud city; over the ruins of which, perhaps, we now stood, on the deck of the frigate! My dear wife made this reflection. Captain Denny assured

her he had seen the chimney tops; and that he had heard of their being hooked sometimes by the fluke of an anchor. "I do not know how to credit that!" said she, smiling. — "Oh! there was not a word of a lie in it, I do believe," cried he. — "Well; but," added his gentle antagonist, "where did the chimneys come from? I have not yet seen any in Jamaica; and if ever there were any in Port Royal, the climate must have been strangely altered by the earthquake!" — Captain James laughed heartily at Denny's exposure; but he himself joined in the laugh, crying aloud, "What an infernal ass I am, to be sure!" — by which unusual candour, and great good humour, he completely turned aside the shaft of ridicule he had unwittingly drawn upon himself.

Dinner was announced by a drum beating "The Roast Beef of Old England," when Captain James, who was a well-bred gentleman, handed my wife down to his cabin; Denny, at the same time, giving me a slap on the shoulder, said, "Make sail, my boy, and keep in the commodore's wake." — There was no other company. We had peas-soup at dinner, which was a novelty to us, and some Newfoundland cod, with onions. There were a couple of roast ducks, and a dish of pancakes made on board without either milk or eggs; the last dish proving very good, was a great mystery to my wife. They were made with sea-water! During the meal we had some excellent Hockenstein, brought from Curaçoa, and a glass of ratafia by way of finish. Our conversation at dinner was not worth noting, excepting an account which Captain James gave us

of an attack by the Maroons, not many months ago, made on Colonel Charlton and his officers, while at mess; taking them by surprise, and although the fellows were beat back before they did much mischief, yet the first report was that Charlton's men were totally cut to pieces. So that the records of the island were immediately packed up at Spanish Town, and all the old women, he said, came flying to the squadron for safety. The table cloth being removed, we drank the king's health; after which, my dear wife addressed herself to our host: — "Now, with your permission, Captain James," asked she, "I will go, and walk the quarter-deck for half an hour; by which time I think Mr. Seaward will thank you for a boat, as we are desirous of getting up to Kingston to-night." He very politely requested the officer on deck to give her his arm, where she enjoyed the fine air: and after we had sat an hour, during which we were abundantly jovial, I pressed my host to allow me to go also; adding, at the same time, that I certainly should not wish to do so were I alone. He felt the propriety of my request, and we soon joined Mrs. Seaward on deck. He ordered coffee to be got ready, and the barge to be manned; and after a short time we took our coffee and our leave, having previously learned that he would sail by the end of the week; before which time I promised to send my letters to his care for England.

On landing, I asked the officer if he could permit me to give the boat's crew some money? to which he answered, "Certainly not; but your offer is not less kind." — "They are going to sea," said I;

"allow me, then, on that ground, to beg the favour of you to buy some vegetables for their mess? There can be no objection to this." — "Well, sir," he replied, "I think there can be no objection; you may give a dollar or two for that to the coxswain, and I will tell the captain." — I put ten dollars into the coxswain's hand. — "Two for yourself," said I, "and one for each of the men." — As we walked away, the men cheered us with "Long life to you, sir, and to your lady!" And the officer, who was a midshipman, accompanied us to our lodgings. On his taking leave, I invited him to come and see us at Kingston, which he said he would do with pleasure.

The day was too far advanced for us to think of proceeding there that evening; so we amused ourselves walking about Port Royal, enjoying the cool hour before we were tired for the night. It is a miserable place now. The piazzas were occupied chiefly by mulatto women (brown ladies, as they call themselves), sitting with their feet placed on a chair, or cocked up against a post, — no very modest attitudes for the female sex; but my candid Eliza rather pitied than found fault with them. With some of them, we saw naval officers standing and joking, or smoking a cigar; but all was quiet, and nothing indecorous in conduct presented itself to our notice. We retired early to a large comfortable room, with an ample bed, and a fine white moscheto net, where we soon found a sweet sleep awaiting us. We breakfasted on coffee, with hot, roasted plantains, and Irish butter, which reminded us of former days; and as soon as the sea breeze

set in, which was about nine o'clock, I paid our bill, and got on board a wherry; which stretched up against the wind to Kingston, making but one tack; and when arrived, we had rather a warm walk from the Wherry Wharf to King's Street.

Diego received us joyfully, saying all was well. We were glad to rest ourselves, and to change our dress; not so to sit under the hands of my friseur. Soon after, as I stood in the hall, Purdy came in with two seamen. I did not like their appearance much; so taking my good fellow aside, I told him I thought it better to defer this matter till I had found a captain, that I might have the advantage of his judgment in the choice. I then said to the men, that I could not ship them till I had fixed on a captain; and on this remark they went. In less than half an hour after, Mr. Finn brought a man who had been mate of a London ship, and whose captain had behaved somewhat brutally towards him. Finding that he had been at the Bay of Honduras, I engaged him as captain for the brig, but with an understanding that, as his wages were to commence immediately, he was to obey my orders in every thing, and to take charge of the schooner for the present, in which he and his crew were to sail to join the brig. I added, that he must come every morning to me at nine o'clock for orders, and meanwhile, as opportunity offered, to seek and bring such men to me as he could procure for a crew, taking care not to engage any of bad character: and I desired him to confer with Purdy, who was a confidential servant. So this was arranged, and in the course of the week he had got his crew together;

and having received from me a very minute statement of the condition of the brig, he took care that every thing should be furnished by Mr. Finn, that might be required for her re-equipment.

My dear wife and myself had for some days past made our beloved friends at Awbury the subjects of our conversation, and I had resolved that she should send a present of 500*l.* to her father, and I would at the same time remit an equal sum to my sisters and brother; and for this end I procured two sets of bills on the Treasury, for which I paid, as before, 288 doubloons 12 dollars for the 1000*l.* sterling. The letter written by my dear Eliza, was replete with expressions of tender duty to her most worthy parent, and of affection to her sisters; but it overflowed with grateful love towards myself. She told them as much of our story as I thought might with prudence be at present disclosed: for as yet, until our affairs were settled, there were many reasons requiring partial secrecy. She, however, told them Providence had bestowed an ample fortune on me; and that if either of her sisters would marry, and come to Kingston, and not object to live with us where we lived, I would provide for that sister and her husband. In the same strain I wrote to my brother at Awbury, telling him that 100*l.* was for each of my sisters, and 200*l.* for himself; and if he chose to marry, and he and his wife should come out to Jamaica, I would provide for them; and that he need not be uneasy about leaving his sisters, as I would allow each of them 50*l.* a year. I desired him to write to me, but not to wonder if five or six months should elapse before

he received an answer, as my place of residence was some hundred miles from Jamaica ; but that a vessel belonging to me would visit Kingston every two or three months on business. I requested him to communicate with our friends at the Parsonage, on our proposals, as Eliza had sent her father money, with an invitation to her sisters, of a similar nature to that which he now received from me. Our letters to Awbury, with their enclosures, were ready ; and another letter to my uncle, informing him how I was getting on, as far as respected the preparations for re-equipping his brig. Likewise letters to Perry and Co., with the first of exchange for 5000*l.*, ordering them to invest it ; and also duplicates of the letter written by the packet, with the second of exchange for the 1000*l.* remitted by that opportunity.

The midshipman who had landed me from the ship, called on me to-day, according to promise, and I invited him to dinner. He seemed an honest unsophisticated youth, and amused us much by his droll phraseology. He said the captain expressed himself very handsomely on the présent I had given the men, and had desired the purser's steward to lay the money out for them in vegetables. "But," continued the boy, laughing, "they would rather have had the cash to bouse their jibs up ashore." When the evening came he desired to depart ; but I persuaded him to stay till the morning, as I wished him to take charge of my letters to Captain James. He soon said, "Yes ;" and when morning came, I gave him my packets, together with a superb gold hilt for a sword (the value of which

could not be less than 50*l.*), which I took from my reserved store, and sent with a separate note to Captain James, begging his acceptance of it, and regretting that I could not here get it mounted; but adding, that I hoped he would have it done in England, and send in the account to my banker's, who had my directions to pay the cost. When the midshipman took these things, I said to him — "My young friend, don't be offended if I offer you a doubloon, to lay in any thing you like for your mess;" but he objected to receive it, until my dear wife remarked — "You cannot refuse it, because it is a present to your messmates as well as to yourself." He acknowledged the weight of this appeal, adding — "You are very kind; and as we hear you are very rich, I will no longer say no. When you went on shore," continued he, "the captain said to our first lieutenant, 'There goes a fellow worth more than his weight in gold!' Some took the speech one way, and some another. Now, sir, I would take it both ways — a good heart, and a good purse! and they are two good things; that is, when they lay close aboard of each other." So, shaking me cordially by the hand, and my dear wife offering him hers, which was not her custom, he took his leave of us, apparently much delighted; perhaps more with what he had said, than from what he had received, either by my present, or our joint courtesy. But if his pleasure did not arise from what he had said, my dear wife's had; that having been the impulse to her cordiality on his leaving us.

The next day I received a note from Captain James, acknowledging the receipt of the letters, which he promised should be carefully delivered; also that he would pay every attention requisite to the safe delivery of the money boxes to my bankers; and then he returned me his warmest acknowledgment for my very superb and valuable present; which, however, he must insist on having mounted at his own expense.

Purdy and his nuptial friends were punctual on the appointed evening. The father and mother of the girl were both mulattoes. The man said he would give his daughter to Jemmy; but as he had heard from him that I had a good settlement, where I could employ him, and give him a house and grounds, he, and his wife, and his son, wished to go too. He told me he was a carpenter, and so was his son; that they had been turned out of a place they had built on some ground that did not belong to the man who sold it to them; and they were so impoverished and vexed by the business, they now wished to leave Jamaica altogether. I consented to take them; but it was on condition that the son should bring a wife with him, as my great object was to people the settlement with honest and industrious families. He answered, there would be no difficulty in that; so he would promise for his son. This matter being thus arranged in the presence of Purdy, I informed them I would lend them all some money, to buy such things as Purdy would advise as necessary to take with them, and that I would charge it to them; for which they must account to me at a future time.

The father and Purdy thanked me, and then departed with the welcome news to their friends. Little more was done this week; and on Sunday, the 30th, we went to church, accompanied by Diego, who now remained with us entirely at our lodgings; the schooner having the captain and his crew on board, besides Purdy, and the two New England negroes, whom we had shipped as part of her establishment.

Early in the week a fine new boat was fixed on with lugsails, measuring quite twelve tons. She was half-decked, and therefore safe in the open sea. I paid 300 dollars for her complete. Purdy agreed to have charge of her, with the two negro sailors; and to take all his family down in her, with their needfuls. I advanced to his father-in-law, the son, and himself, 20 dollars each; and told him he must ballast with coals, which I should want to burn lime; that they were now lying on Mr. Green's wharf, where he must take them in, and be in readiness to accompany the schooner, whose cargo was now ready, and would certainly sail on Monday or Tuesday next. I called this fine boat *The Avon*, after the beautiful river down which my Eliza and myself sailed on leaving England, and on whose admired banks we had walked delightfully together before we embarked on our eventful voyage. It had also been my place of recreation when with my uncle at Bristol; and I loved such recollections. I had wished to call our schooner *The Severn*, in honour of that noble river, near to which our native village stands; but she had been registered by name, and ugly as it was to our ears, it could not be

changed; she was called The Porghee, after a fish much esteemed at Bermuda.

By the middle of the week Mr. Finn was ready; but it seemed the spars could not be got below; so the schooner now began to take in her cargo, leaving the spars to be stowed upon deck. A few thousand bricks were already placed on the floor of the vessel; she then took in spare anchors for herself and the Avon, and also a long 12-pounder, fitted with a depressing carriage, to mount on the promontory, and nearly a ton of shot for the gun. Then, *in barrels*, came American flour, rice biscuit, Irish beef, pork, butter, sugar, salt, suet, coffee, raisins, gunpowder, pitch, tar, resin, kegs of paint, kegs of ball cartridges, and a keg of flints: *in boxes*, Russia duck, English stripes, checks, linens, coloured handkerchiefs for the head, &c. &c., soap, candles, refined sugar and tea: *in cases*, ironmongery; as knives, locks, hinges, nails, &c.; ship carpenters' tools; house carpenters' tools; twenty stand of arms, with their appointments, and blank paper cartridges for the 12-pounder: *in crates*, kitchen utensils; as pots, pans, kettles, &c., with a large quantity of yabbahs, or earthen pots, used for cooking in Jamaica; also wooden trenchers, and coarse crockery, as jugs, brown dishes, delft plates, &c.: *in packages*, implements of husbandry; as pick-axes, spades, shovels, hoes, axes, hatchets, bill-hooks, &c.; sawyers' saws, leather, canvass, cordage, oakum; a quantity of slop clothing, including shoes; a large and small Union Jack, with spare buntin for other flags; two mahogany bedsteads, with mattresses and moscheto nets: *loose*, spare

cables for the schooner and Avon, sails and rigging for the brig, a timber carriage wheelbarrows, handbarrows, squared timber for erecting habitations, boards, planks, staves, shingles; a great handmill, with a wheel for grinding maize; two mahogany tables, twelve mahogany chairs, wardrobe, and two chests of drawers. There were besides, a few hams, and a cheese; six dozen of Canary in hampers, and a quarter cask of the same; a large box of Spanish cigars, jars with oil, and spirits of turpentine, two looking-glasses, two spy-glasses, a speaking-trumpet, and bugle horn, a pair of glass shades for the candles, and some other things not herein enumerated: however, the whole did not make more than three fourths of a cargo; the planks and boards being stowed above all, so as to make a platform fore and aft in the hold, with room enough above it for the accommodation of such people as we might think fit to place there; as well as for the stock that Diego was to bring on board; viz. six sheep, four pigs, twelve turkeys, twelve geese, and twelve Guinea fowls; also a supply of plantain suckers, and a quantity of pine-apples, shaddocks, oranges, limes, and some other fruits. I may here remark, that the gunpowder, of which there were two barrels, as well as the kegs of ball cartridges, were cased in flour barrels, with a packing of Indian meal between, for security and safety.

While they were engaged in thus loading the schooner, I procured a letter of introduction to the Governor's secretary at Spanish Town; and hiring a calash with two horses, which I preferred to a

kitereen, we were driven over from Kingston on Thursday morning, in about an hour and a half. Soon after our arrival I waited on the secretary, and told him that I understood he gave commissions for island appointments, and that I wanted a commission as Captain-commandant over a place where I was settled with some negroes and free people. It was a small island or two, among some rocks and shoals off the Mosquito shore, on which there were no inhabitants when I landed there, about fifteen months ago; that we had built some huts, and I was now going back thither with a schooner; that we had prevented a Spaniard, about three months since, from taking a Virginia vessel; and that I had hoisted the English colours, but was afraid to protect them, without a commission. The secretary asked me what the island was called. I said it was not laid down in any chart that I had seen; I therefore had called the group '*Seaward Islands*,' after my own name."—"And what is your Christian name?" he replied. I told him, "Edward."—"Well, Captain Edward Seaward," said he, "you shall have the commission; but you must pay twenty doubloons for it."—"That is a great sum, sir," returned I, "but I do not demur; you shall have it: and I will thank you to give me the privilege of appointing any person on the island, my lieutenant, in case of my occasional absence."—"O certainly," he replied; "there can be no objection to that." He then requested me to sit down, while he went to settle the business. He returned in about an hour, with the commission, signed by the Governor. I read it over, and

found it every thing I wished. I then counted down the twenty doubloons to the secretary; who wished me a good morning, without asking me any more questions. Of that I was heartily glad: but I could not help thinking, that I never had seen the commonest mercantile transaction done in a more matter of course manner; and I strongly suspected, that when the Governor put his pen to the commission, he knew no more of the nature of the appointment he was signing, than he did of the rocks and islands over which he had unconsciously placed me: however, I had obtained the important credential; and my wife rejoiced with me, on my return to the inn, at the quiet manner in which the thing had been done. "Now, Captain Seaward," said she, smiling, and taking my hand, "we will have dinner; and I shall have the honour of drinking your health; and we will then return to Kingston."

On re-entering our lodgings there, I found Mr. Green waiting for me. A few difficulties had occurred in procuring some items of the cargo: however, after a little conversation, the obstacles were surmounted; having chiefly arisen respecting prices, and terms of payment, the word "ready money" acted like a charm, and all the stoppage vanished. He stayed with me to smoke a cigar; during which time I told him, if I found he behaved to me with strict integrity, I should appoint him my agent at Kingston; with which place I might have considerable business. He thanked me, observing, that it would be his interest to serve me well and faithfully. We were glad to

retire early, and rose next morning in health and spirits.

On Friday morning I consulted with Diego and Purdy as to the expediency of purchasing two new negro boys, to form a part of the schooner's crew; whom, I thought, with Purdy and Martin, and the two New England negroes, might be sufficient. My worthy counsellors approved the idea; but I added, "Don't suppose that I will have any slaves at Seaward Islands. I will bind these lads for seven years; after that, they shall be their own masters."—"God bless our good master!" my two friends, one after the other, replied. "Dear Eliza," continued I, "would it not be well for you to take three or four girls on the same terms? for our society will be so constituted on our return, that you will require them." She cordially acquiesced; and we went all together to the wharf of a merchant, who had just disembarked a cargo of these human beings for sale. My wife remained in the counting-house; while I, with my attendants, proceeded into the enclosure where the poor creatures were all assembled. Some were young, and some in the prime of life; some were gay, and some were sad; but all exhibited a black and glossy skin, having been dressed with palm oil for the occasion; and all their vesture might have been replaced with a fig leaf. After some scrutiny, my men picked out two nice clean-limbed lads of about eighteen, and they were led up to the store. The price was 50*l.* currency each, and the bargain was struck. The merchant's clerk was told that Mrs. Seaward wanted two or three girls;

but that, as she could not go down into the mart, we would therefore thank him to bring a few up. Half a dozen speedily made their appearance ; and my wife was selecting three from the number, when one of the young new negroes I had purchased, evinced considerable restlessness and some emotion. My dear Eliza, regarding him attentively, said to me —“ I am sure that lad has a mother, or wife, or sister, among these people, whom he wishes should go along with him.” I bade Diego take him out to see if it was so, by leaving him loose, and observing to whom he would run. My Eliza proved to be right : they returned with his sister : and when my wife selected her, which she did at once, the youth fell upon his knees before her, kissing her feet. I was asked 40*l.* currency each, for the three girls : the money was paid ; and Diego then conducted the party to our lodgings, where they were received and placed in the negro-yard by the brown lady, among her own domestics.

On our return, the first care of my dear wife was to have these girls washed with warm water and soap, and then neatly clothed ; while Purdy took the lads on board the schooner, and put them under the same discipline, treating them also kindly.

In the afternoon, the captain of the brig called at his usual hour, and reported progress. He said he would be complete on Saturday night. “ Very well,” I replied ; “ but do not hurry : I will not sail on Sunday ; and I shall leave Monday, to collect any things that in the hurry of business may have been forgotten : we will sail on Tuesday.” — “ That is very well, sir,” he said ; “ but I would

suggest to you, that it may be a very bad business to send Purdy's family in the Avon. We may want that boat to look out among the shoals and breakers for a passage; and if she should take the ground with those people in her, there will be horrible confusion. You had better send them in the schooner; and put half a dozen good hands in the boat, to jump out, and get her off, if she should ground; or use the oars, to keep her clear of a reef, if necessary." I thanked him for his advice, and would abide by it. "But," said I, "Finn was to get me a skipper for the schooner, and it is quite time I should be suited; he has not done it." "I know a proper fellow I could recommend," returned the captain: "he is rather young, but he is a nice lad, and a prime navigator; and no lubber withal: he was born and bred at sea. I will bring him to you to-morrow, if you please."—"Do so," said I; "but, remember, do not serve a friend at the probable expense of human life! The person I want, is to take charge of my schooner, in which my wife and myself sometimes may be; and always many of those we love as friends."—"I would trust my own life with him," he replied, by way of recommendation, "as far as that goes."—"Then bring him," said I.

In the morning the captain called on me with his young friend, "Francis Drake."—"I like your name, and your countenance, sir," said I; "but you are very young."—"I am twenty-two," he replied, "and have been at sea all my days. I was born on shipboard; my father was master of a man of war: I was a midshipman for some

years; but my father being dead, and it being peace, I could not get promotion. I have been on this station, and in these seas, in and out of the service, altogether six years; and I think, without flattering myself too much, I know as much about it as any man now sailing out of Kingston. I would not have said so much," continued he, "only a man must say something for himself, when he is taken for a brat of a boy." I smiled, and stretching out my hand, asked his pardon, saying—"I doubt not, Mr. Drake, we shall in time be better friends. I engage you, if you please, at the same rate your friend there, is engaged to command the brig." He took me at my word, and he was captain of the schooner. "Now, gentlemen," resumed I, "sit down, and let us consult together." I then opened to them the situation of the place to which we were going, its unknown longitude, its complete investment with reefs and shoals; and showed them, by sketches of the land, remarks, &c. After some consultation, it was agreed that Captain Drake should go in the Avon, with three white seamen belonging to the brig, and Purdy and the two New England blacks; while Captain Taylor, of the brig, should navigate the schooner, with his mate and the four other white seamen.

This being decided, I sent Diego for Purdy and his father-in-law, and stated these things to them. Purdy did not like it much; but his father-in-law, who had just seen the two vessels, was very glad; and Purdy was easily persuaded to confide his wife to her own family, during the passage. I had still one object more to compass, and without loss of

time, for Monday would be occupied in settling and paying the accounts. I found it would be necessary to get a regular ship-carpenter to go out with me; for although Xavier was a clever fellow, yet his sufficiency could not be relied on where a regular repair might be wanted. I therefore sent for Mr. Finn, and, after desiring him to meet me next morning at Mr. Green's counting-house with his bill, I asked him if he knew of any one that would dispose of a ship-carpenter negro, whom he could recommend; and, as an inducement, I would buy wife and children, if there were any. He answered, he thought he did. And in the afternoon he brought a person to me, who was as much disposed to sell as I was to buy; for he was going home, he said — that is, to England. He seemed an honest man; for he said he would leave the price of the negro to Mr. Finn, or any one else. "No," returned I; "it shall be left to yourself. Has the carpenter any family? how old is he?"—"He is old, sir," was the answer; "I suppose nearly forty; he has no children with him; he has a wife, and she is nigh as old as himself."—"I should like to see them," I replied, "before we say any thing more about them." He then went for them, and they both pleased me. They appeared healthy, and did not seem at all the worse for wear, if I may so express it. I sent them to the back of the house, and asked him his price. "Give me," said he, 100*l.* sterling for the man, and you may have the woman for what you please. "That is," replied I, "into the bargain, I suppose."—"Not quite that," said he; "but I will

take any thing in reason.”—“Forty pounds,” cried Finn. “Yes,” replied he, “that will do, though it is only the price of a new negro.”—“Of a young one,” I responded: “I think, sir,” continued I, “if I give you 100*l.* sterling I should have man and wife; that is 100*l.* currency for the one, and 40*l.* currency for the other; and I will give you no more: take that, and I will pay you on delivery.” He mused some time, and at last consented. The bill of sale was made, and the money paid: after which I called in Allan Derrick and his wife Priscilla, and told them I had purchased them; that I was sorry they were not younger, because in seven years I should give them their freedom, if they behaved well, and should desire it; but, in the mean time, I would treat them with the greatest kindness. To this promise my faithful Diego bore testimony, by saying—“Yes, indeed, sir, you indeed, sir, all like one our father.” I asked Allan if he had any property. He replied—“Not too much, massa; have pig and goat, and few fowls, and some lilly tings in house.”—“Well,” I answered, “you may carry them all with you. Diego will take charge of them; and you shall have a house for yourself and your wife; and whatever you have shall not be injured.”—“Tank you, massa,” he said; “me see you good buckara massa.” I now told Diego to go home with these two people, and to put them in the way of being ready to embark on Monday.

My dear wife had kept herself in her bedroom, all the while I was engaged in this morning's business; but she was not idle. She was making many

arrangements in her own department ; and the brown lady, with a frank-hearted activity, very usefully assisted her. She had not left our new damsels to run about the negro yard ; but had taken them into her room, and set them about unravelling some hanks of thread, and doing some other things that required neither skill nor knowledge. When dinner time drew on, the girls were sent out to walk in the yard ; while we, too happy to be together again alone, talked over our affairs, and dressed for the hour of repast.

We had nearly dined when Diego came back, with a very satisfactory account of our ship-carpenter and his wife ; who were also, he said, quite happy in all he had told them of their new home. — “Get your own dinner, Diego,” replied I ; “then go on board the schooner, and make my compliments to the captain, saying, I wish the two young new negroes to come ashore with you to see their friends.” — Diego, who had a kind heart, was glad of the errand ; and in a couple of hours we saw him return, with the two lads neatly dressed in white jackets and trowsers. I desired him to leave them standing near us ; then to bring in the girls. It was truly delightful to see the meeting : true, there was no ecstatic burst of feeling ; but all the evidence of joy their degraded condition was capable of, was elicited. My dear wife gave each of them an orange ; and then signs were made to them to go into the yard. Diego accompanied them ; and endeavoured, by pantomime, which he well understood, to make them comprehend that

they were all going together. He returned with the youths to the schooner before sunset; and twice, during the two following days, they were again brought to renew the meeting with their friends, which had the very best effect on the spirits and conduct of the whole.

As I sat smoking my cigar after coffee, my dearest Eliza gently said — “Edward, I feel that we are chosen vessels for the mercy of God to others, which also we ourselves have so largely shared: I do not repent that we are taking all this trouble, and putting our lives to risk, when so much good may be accomplished by the means placed in our hands. I own my natural inclination was to go to England; pay your uncle for the brig altogether, if required, and so be done with it; and then enjoy our fortune. But to enjoy,” continued she, after pausing a little, “is the gift only of God; to possess, may be his gift also; or, it may be the gift of him who said, ‘I will give thee all the kingdoms of the earth, if thou wilt fall down and worship me.’” — “True, my own best gift!” I replied; “I should be the most ungrateful of men, to the good God who has bestowed all this on me, if I did not feel that this money, so wonderfully delivered into my hands, was for some especial purpose of stewardship. The providential arrival of the poor cast-away negroes, and then of the schooner,—all — all working together to give us the means of providing every comfort, towards planting a colony of refuge in that blessed haven of our own preservation, — seems to me, in solemn truth, as so many signs from the Divine Will, that it is our duty to fulfil

a task allotted to us, in that long unknown island." — Tears stood in my Eliza's eyes, when I said this; and, oh! how like an angel she did look! for they were tears of overflowing happiness. "His spirit then bearing witness with her spirit," that we were indeed disposed to obey his most holy will.

Saturday, 5th. — I went immediately after breakfast to Mr. Green's counting-house, where I received a statement of the money he had laid out for every thing that constituted the cargo, — on all of which I allowed him commission, — and made the payment. In the course of the morning I settled with Mr. Finn; the disbursements on account of the brig being made a separate account: and I was pleased to find all fair; so that I paid the several demands with much satisfaction.

After I had done this business, I waited on the paymaster, to enquire if he had any bills on England: he told me he had not; but referred me to the agent-victualler, to whom he gave me a letter of introduction. This gentleman was very glad to see me on my errand, as the cash would be convenient to him; and he quite chuckled when he heard that I could let him have a large sum. But I complained of the premium; and told him, I would not take bills for any considerable amount, at any thing above five per cent. He replied, that all government bills had fetched ten, for some time back; but if I could accommodate him with 10,000*l.* sterling, he would give the bills at five. We struck the bargain; — and on Monday I waited on him with two boxes of the doubloons; out of which I counted

down 2747 pieces, being the amount required, receiving back 8 dollars. He in turn handed me over a set of bills of exchange on the Treasurer of the Navy, for the 10,000*l.* sterling approved by the Admiral; for which I had stipulated as a security for government acceptance.

Sunday, 6th.—We kept this sabbath by going to church. Before we went, my dear wife and I had some difficulty in deciding whether we should have Purdy married there this day; but as Martin was not married in a church, and others at Seaward Island could not be, we feared it might make a schism, or create a jealousy among the people; and we therefore resolved to celebrate the rite on our return, so that all our people might be on the same footing with respect to such matters.

Monday, 7th. — After negotiating for the bills as above stated, and paying for every thing, I found I had four bags of doubloons still untouched; and about 100 extra doubloons from the last bags we had opened. Of these, I converted 150 into dollars; for which I received 2400. I placed them in bags, in the iron chest, beside the gold; reserving as much as I thought necessary for present use. I now wrote letters to Perry and Co., inclosing them the first of exchange for 10,000*l.*, with orders to fund the amount; sending them at the same time the seconds of the former bills, and also inclosing my Will, which I indorsed — “Not to be opened, but by myself, or in the event of my decease.” — And I moreover got ready a duplicate letter, with further duplicates of the bills already sent, to be forwarded

by Mr. Green, to Messrs. Perry and Co., at a future early opportunity.

Diego reported all his stock (consisting of six sheep, four pigs, twelve turkeys, twelve geese, twelve Guinea fowls, as also a quantity of plantain suckers and plantains, some roots, and a good supply of fruits) to be safe on board; besides Allan Derrick's pig and goat; he had brought a fine large dog also with him, which he begged to take; and, after some hesitation amongst us for fear of our little pet Fidele, with my dear wife's approbation I at last gave my consent; but the dog was to go in the Avon, and not in the schooner. Diego declared himself well satisfied, if it might go in any way, for it was a fine animal, and his name was Lion.

Before dinner I visited the vessels, and was highly pleased with their appearance, and all the arrangements that had been made: every thing necessary had been provided; and I felt greatly indebted to Mr. Green, and the two captains, for having taken so much minute trouble off my hands. I paid a month's wages in advance to the captains, and also to each of the men. On returning to our lodgings, I would have invited the captains and Mr. Green to dine with us; but now that we were on the point of sailing, I thought it best that every one should be at his post. My dear Eliza and I, therefore, dined alone, and after dinner busied ourselves in packing up some suitable clothes we had ordered; amongst which were several pairs of buck and doe skin boots, the colour of our own sandy isthmus, on which we hoped once more soon to tread.

At my fond wife's request, a handsome suit of uniform, blue and gold, with a hat looped and handsomely laced, had been made for the Captain-commandant. "If those Spaniards," said she, "should ever intrude themselves into our bay, which they may do as friends; without an imposing uniform on your person, they might pay very little respect to your commission." I saw the force of the observation, and therefore the uniform was made.

At the last visit of my hair-dresser, he recommended me to purchase of him an Adonis, a new fashioned wig very much in vogue, instead of having my own hair tortured into the mode. I wished he had informed me of such a thing at first, as it would have saved me a great deal of time and torment. "But," said I, "I do not want any thing of the kind where I am going." My dear wife thought otherwise; and, smiling, desired him to bring the wig. He obeyed, with a proper box to hold it in, and all the requisites for powdering it up, when required. As it was my Eliza's pleasure, I made no more demur, but took it, and paid him 20 dollars for it. When he was gone, I said to her — "What am I to do with this mop-head, my Mistress Commandant, at Seaward Islands?" — "It is for my Captain-commandant," she replied, "when he has occasion to appear in state!" I smiled at her remark, but felt at the same time that it was dictated by good sense, and a just regard to the opinions of men.

My kind wife meanwhile, had provided herself with some presents for those left behind; and had attended to the minutiae of our own future com-

forts, in the procurement of many things not necessary to be enumerated: and having finished the day in prayer to God our Father, we rose next morning in health and spirits. We paid our bill cheerfully to the brown lady, our hostess, and thanked her besides for her many civilities. The negresses and our trunks were conveyed on board, followed by ourselves and our faithful Fidele, who ran by our side before the great iron chest; which was a formidable burden, from the combined weight of itself and its remaining contents.

CHAP. II.

TUESDAY, April 8th. — We embarked at seven o'clock, where nothing but happy faces met us. I felt I had no need of pistols here! All hands cheered us; and the women crowded round my wife, kissing her hand. Indeed, she smiled so sweetly on them, and had already done so many kind things to them, they could not but love her. We did not receive our clearance from the Custom-house before nine o'clock, which gave us time to inspect the dispositions made on board for the people. Temporary combings had been fixed to a scuttle cut in the main hatches, to protect the opening from the wash of the sea, should it at any time come over the decks. This was well; and a wind-sail was fitted to the scuttle, to throw air down between decks; so that the stock, and the people on the platform there, might breathe freely and wholesomely. Here were berths put up for Allan Derrick and his wife, for David Allwood and his wife, for young Allwood and his wife, and two berths for the three negresses and Purdy's wife. The captain was requested to sleep in the steerage with the crew, to which he readily consented; himself, Diego, and the two new negro boys, John and Harry, being packed in among them. We were in all, on board the schooner, fifteen in number. And in the Avon there were altogether seven; Captain Drake, Jemmy Purdy, the two New Eng-

land blacks, and three white seamen. A little before nine o'clock the Avon hauled alongside, and I went on board to take a look at her. Some precautions had been taken here too against the sea, by fixing canvass so as to make a defence if necessary; with which I was much pleased. Captain Drake, who, as captain of the schooner, had cleared her out at the Custom-house, now returned, but took his station in the Avon.

The sea-breeze having set in, and the pilot being on board, we set sail; and with the fine little lugger in our wake, ran down to Port Royal in little more than an hour. As we passed the men-of-war, I perceived the Solebay had gone; so, wishing her as well as ourselves a good voyage, we stood out to sea, and dismissed the pilot. The vessels steered nearly South, keeping away about half a point, to allow for East variation. At sunset we computed our run off the land to be about eighteen leagues, which was sufficient to take us clear of the Pedro shoals; we now kept away S.W., and having run about one hundred miles by Wednesday at noon, we observed in $15^{\circ} 48' N.$ It was determined still to steer S.W., keeping a good look-out ahead; and at noon on Thursday we observed in $14^{\circ} 46'$, having run little more than eighty miles during the last twenty-four hours, by reason of going under easy sail all night, and again laying by, for some hours in the forenoon, until we could ascertain the latitude, so as to shape our course accordingly, supposing ourselves not to be very far distant from the place of our destination. After some consultation, we agreed to steer West; and, by four o'clock, breakers were discovered right

ahead; we in consequence hauled up to the northward, bringing the breakers on our beam to leeward. The Avon was now ordered to keep three or four cables' lengths ahead of the schooner, on her larboard bow. We continued to stand to the northward for about an hour, when we were enabled to keep away N.W.: at this time something like land was discerned to the southward of us, but it was too late in the day to endeavour to close with it; we therefore stood off and on, all night, holding a pretty good offing, for fear of encountering calms or currents, while among so many unknown reefs and shoals. At daylight in the morning we again descried the land to the southward, and stood in towards it. The Avon being within hail, I desired him to keep on our quarter till further orders; and I would endeavour to lead, and find the channel. After coming up with the broken water, and then running a few miles on a west course, keeping the surf on the reef about a mile within us, we were enabled to steer two points to the southward, and then S.W. A little before noon we set the high land nearest to us, bearing S.E., when the channel appeared open, having a little hummock in the distance, which I knew to be our homestead promontory. We now hauled to the wind on the larboard tack, laying up about S.S.E., and stood in. I was not without fear and apprehension, although I knew there was a navigable channel that separated the two islands on the north, through part of which, Diego, who was now at my elbow, had rowed his canoe. Thus assured, and thus backed, I ventured to keep on under easy sail,

till we found ourselves embayed within a horse-shoe reef, and were thus compelled to stand back again to escape from our perilous situation. We then rounded the edge of the reef to the westward, keeping away a little till we brought the hummock in the distance to bear S.S.E. The channel now appearing quite open, but with shoals on each side of it, we stood in again, with the Avon leading; but soon found ourselves obstructed by a long line of broken water, stretching apparently all the way across. Being thus straitened, and at a loss how to proceed, I thought it expedient to bring the schooner to an anchor for the present, under a low small coral island that lies on the eastern extremity of the breakers, and there remain until the Avon should make out the passage. I hailed Mr. Drake to that effect; and as soon as we dropped anchor, he made sail along the northern edge of the broken water that obstructed our passage, until he at length rounded its western extremity: then hauling up to the S.E., the boat entered a clear and unobstructed channel, through which she stood on, with a full sail, for about three miles; making her way quite into that harbour, which on my first arrival I had mistaken for a lake, and which I have so called more than once in the early part of this Journal.

As soon as Mr. Drake ascertained a clear channel, he hoisted a Union Jack, as was agreed on, but stood on until he entered the harbour; he then put back, standing towards the schooner. As soon as I perceived his signal, we got under weigh; and quickly rounding the reef, hauled up to windward

of a high rock, and afterwards a low island, which lay amid channel, passing between them and the northern end of the main island. Here the Avon met us, and took her station on our weather quarter; and we sailed hence together, with a flowing sheet, and colours flying, through the strait that separates the two main islands on the north, into the open harbour, where at once a thousand well-known objects burst upon us. Xavier had caught a glimpse of the Avon from the shore, when first exploring the channel, so that we had scarcely passed the strait when we saw the Colours go up on the promontory. Captain Taylor was much pleased with the sight, and complimented me on the occasion. I will not attempt to describe my emotion, when my dear wife pressed my hand in silence at that moment. In half an hour more we brought up in Woodland Bay, with our dear mansion, and our still dearer silk-cotton-tree, in full view before us; and at the same instant the anchor dropped, Xavier and Martin were alongside in the canoe. They were almost out of themselves; they embraced my knees, they danced about, they hugged old Diego almost to death, and bowed to the Señora Donna with all their heart. Captain Taylor was both pleased and amused by the display which they made of their joy at our return. The boats were quickly hoisted out; and we landed at once, with Diego, and the three negro girls, on the silk-cotton-tree beach, where Rota, with her daughter Mira, and Hachinta also, were standing to receive us: my dear wife had scarcely put foot on the shore, when they all, with one accord, threw themselves at her

feet, embracing her knees; and when they arose, the new negro girls thought they must do the same, so they prostrated themselves also. But my Eliza raised them instantly, saying, "No! No!" She was affectionate herself, and loved every demonstration of it; but any thing that could tend to give worship where it was not due she utterly abhorred.

After this scene my beloved took my arm; and we felt as our first parents would have felt, had they been permitted to return to Paradise after their expulsion. Rota had prepared coffee for us, as soon as Xavier reported the appearance of a vessel; and indeed the reviving beverage was very acceptable: for we had passed through an anxious and trying day. I desired to have supper ready about eight o'clock, and requested Hachinta to cook a good supply of provisions to refresh the people. After coffee, I was going on board, but met our trunks, and cot, and iron chest, coming on shore; and as the evening was drawing to a close, I ordered all the people to be landed, excepting the white sailors, who were to take up their quarters in the schooner: the two New England blacks were to return to take charge of the Avon, and sleep there. After the captains had seen that their men were properly disposed of, and made comfortable, they were to come on shore to supper. David Allwood and his family had the plank-house allotted to them; and Purdy, being yet unmarried, after passing the evening with them, took up his lodgings on board for the night, along with the two young negro boys; who returned with him, having been per-

mitted to land. Allan Derrick and his wife lodged with Xavier; and Diego went to his own house, where Martin and his wife also lived. The three negro girls were to sleep in the great hall. Captains Taylor and Drake occupied the cabin of the schooner. These arrangements being made, we all retired to our respective lodgings, as soon as every body had been refreshed; and then my dear wife and myself, after shutting our door, lifted up our hearts to that God whose mercy and goodness had attended us by land and by sea.

Saturday, 12th. — I sent for the captains early in the morning, and told them they must move the schooner within the black rock, and there discharge the cargo; after which they must take it up under the promontory, close to the plank-house: and to avoid the formality of repeated invitations, I added, that I should expect the pleasure of their company to breakfast, dinner, and coffee, every day, while the bustle of our work was going forward. Captain Taylor was to superintend on board, and Captain Drake on shore, till the cargo was all got out; the latter taking an account of every thing as it was landed: but I told them, as to-morrow would be the sabbath, there must be no work then; — that we should have prayers at ten o'clock in the hall, and that dinner would be provided on shore for all hands at one o'clock. I sent for Allwood and his son, and Derrick, telling them they were to work under Captain Drake's orders, and that their wives must come daily to the store for provisions. I promised Purdy he should be married the ensuing day, which gave him great joy. Xavier

was retained, to assist Diego in bringing the stock, and plants, and vegetables, and fruits, and other matters to the plantation. The Avon, meanwhile, was left at anchor, to take care of herself.

My dear wife undertook to manage all the provision arrangements, for I found I now had a great deal to do in writing: regular accounts must be kept with respect to every individual in the settlement; and a correct statement must be made out from the brig's bill of lading, of every thing I had taken from her for my own use. I therefore set about opening books, in a regular way, for all purposes connected with money transactions. In the afternoon we paid a visit to the pen, which, with its new inmates, was like a fair. We were happy to see the armadillo and our two pet pigeons among the number. All, excepting the pigs, seemed to take quietly to the place, but they were unruly members; and we found Xavier prudently planking up a corner to confine them. The large dog showed no signs of a savage disposition, but, on the contrary, was placid as a lamb, and lay down very peaceably in the hall, allowing Fidele to play with him as he pleased. In the evening the captains and myself smoked a cigar, and my Eliza was much pleased with their decorous and respectful manner. We talked over our operations, doing, and to be done; and I took this opportunity of telling them, that I would leave the great gun, and the bricks, and the spare anchor and cables, which formed the ground tier of the schooner, in the hold, until we were quite at leisure to put them on shore.

Sunday, 13th. — At ten o'clock every body assembled in the great hall, dressed in their best, to prayers. We were thirty-two in number; and looking round upon them, I blessed God for the sight. My dear wife opened the sacred duty with a hymn, and I read the whole service of the church, which finished with another hymn, and the prayer for grace. Some were devout, some only orderly; but every thing in God's good time. After service I performed the matrimonial rite, — David Allwood giving his daughter Cornelia in marriage to Jemmy Purdy; and at one o'clock dinner was set out for all hands, under the great tree, on a table of planks raised about a foot from the ground; round which they all sat, squat fashion, at meat, to the great fun, as well as gratification, of the white sailors, who partook of their good cheer. But the mate of the brig was on this day invited to dine with us, which we postponed to a late hour on account of the wedding-feast. Having plenty of limes, I tapped the rum cask, and gave Diego sufficient to make the whole company as much punch as would do them good. They were supplied with abundance of melons; and I allowed them to amuse themselves with dancing, for fear, if unoccupied, they might do something less innocent. About three o'clock Rota served us up a fine fish, with other meats, flesh and fowl. Our guests were rather astonished at our hospitality and abundance; the very sight of which produced a cheerful influence on every countenance. After dinner we took some punch, and in the evening regaled ourselves with coffee and a cigar. At an

early hour every one retired to their respective quarters; the bride and bridegroom taking up their habitation with her family in the plank-house.

On Monday morning all hands went manfully to work, so that by Wednesday afternoon the schooner's cargo was all landed, and placed under the side of the promontory; having a temporary covering of planks and boards over all, with the exception of the spars and sails for the brig.

On Thursday morning the people erected shears on board the brig, to serve two purposes: first, to take out as much of the cargo as would be requisite to lighten her, so as to get her afloat; and, secondly, to afterwards enable them to raise the fish of the mainmast into place. Xavier had kept her dry, so there was no water to pump out. They began about mid-day to take out the cargo, and I had the two casks of rum, which came out with the first portion of it, brought immediately to the store-house at the plantation, to prevent the possibility of intoxication among the men. Before evening, Captain Taylor thought the brig began to lift, and proposed taking one of the schooner's spare anchors and a cable, round in the Avon early in the morning, to try to heave her off. Derrick, and Allwood, and Xavier, and Manus Allwood, were employed in getting ready and putting together the pieces which were to form the fish of the mainmast, and in doing all such work as required the hand of the ship-carpenter. On Friday morning the Avon was brought round with an anchor and cable, which was laid out astern, and by which they hove the brig off presently into deep water,

drawing her back about twenty yards from where she had lain with her fore-foot aground. She still remained with her side close to the rocks, along which there was a gangway, to carry any thing on board.

The vessel being now fairly afloat, it was desirable to ascertain the state of her bottom. One of the white seamen volunteered to dive under the keel, stripping at the same instant, and plunging under her bows. He soon re-appeared, reporting a piece of the false keel off forward; but, after making several voyages of discovery under water, round and round the vessel, could not spy out any other injury. A consultation was now held with Captain Taylor, in which we agreed that if the brig did not leak more than usual after replacing the cargo, and bringing her round the promontory, he should proceed with her to the Bay of Honduras, without delaying to make further repairs here, the time of year being as yet favourable for fine weather, and the run not requiring more than three days. This being settled, and the vessel secured to the shore, they set about reloading her, and restowing her cargo, which was all again in place by Saturday at noon. I ordered the doors that had been taken away from the cabin, to be replaced; and also the table, and chairs, and stools to be restored.

Sunday, 20th. — We observed the sabbath of to-day by attendance at divine service, and in innocent recreations, there not being any excuse for dancing or other noisy mirth.

Monday, 21st. — They began to fish the mast;

and as there were about seven or eight feet of stump standing above board, we were of opinion that it would be made perfectly strong and secure. The shrouds and back-stays, together with the main-stay, and every other thing as far as was practicable, had been prepared at Kingston. The mast was up, and the standing rigging over-head, and the cross-trees and top on, and main-topmast pointed, by the middle of the week; and by Saturday I had the pleasure to see all the yards across, the running rigging rove, the sails bent, and every thing in place, and the brig towed round by the boats, and anchored off the plantation. I was glad to find that there had been little occasion for the pumps during the week, the leak scarcely requiring more than the ordinary spell of twice a day, and it had not increased on bringing the vessel round; so that it was now resolved she should put to sea without loss of time.

Sunday, 27th.—There was a general muster to prayers at ten o'clock; and at one all hands were regaled with a dinner under the cotton-tree, as on the Sunday after their arrival: devotion, with contentment, and good order, being our combined object, under existing circumstances. At noon the brig hoisted her colours, which were brought down from the flag-staff on the promontory, and the large Union Jack I had brought with me from Jamaica hoisted there in its stead. The colours of the schooner and the Avon were flying also; so that, altogether, we looked very grand, “low and aloft,” as sailors express it.

Monday, 28th.—It was determined that the brig

should not sail until the crew had assisted to get the twelve-pounder up to the flag-staff, which was a formidable undertaking. Early in the morning the gun was landed from the schooner, on the rocks beneath the plantation-house, and, by means of the timber carriage (a clever invention for raising large pieces of timber, and great guns, by hand), they easily transported our noble piece of ordnance to the foot of the acclivity; at the very spot where the original footpath had been made to the ravine. But the carpenters found it necessary to widen the avenue; after which, by means of planks, and tackles, and parbuckles, they succeeded in dragging the gun up to the flag-staff. That mastered, its carriage easily followed, and the gun was mounted before sunset. On their return, I gave the men a glass of grog each, and a dollar. This operation had been conducted by Captain Drake.

The captain of the brig and myself had not been idle at home; we examined all the accounts, with the invoices, and compared the duplicates I had previously made out. In addition to which, we had taken an inventory of whatever remained belonging to the former captain and crew; to this I subjoined, as an appendix, a list of the articles I had appropriated, which I believed to have belonged to the one or the other. A duplicate copy of this paper also, was now made, and signed by Captain Taylor and myself; making ourselves respectively responsible for such articles as still remained with him, or had been taken away by me. Of the duplicates we each took one. After I had delivered all the papers above alluded to, I handed him what

are commonly called the ship's papers, and with them a narrative of the shipwreck, with a protest in form as to the accident. I then gave him letters to my cousin, and instructions how to proceed, if he did not find him at the Bay of Honduras; and also a letter to my uncle at Bristol, containing a detail of proceedings, as far as regarded his business, up to the present time. It is scarcely necessary to observe, that in my letters to my uncle and cousin, after thanking them for their intended kindness to me, I now, having other views, gave up all intention of settling at the Bay; and intimated, that I should be ready to settle our accounts as soon after the brig's arrival in England as my uncle could examine and adjust them.

Tuesday, 29th.—About nine o'clock in the morning I gave Captain Taylor the marks for going out of the southern channel, and he took his leave. Purdy, who knew the situation of all the reefs and shoals, was put on board the Avon; and as soon as the brig got under weigh, he made sail ahead, leading her out in safety, to the fair way in the offing. The boat, and my pilot, returned about four o'clock, having seen our friend clear of the shoals, standing to the S. W. I congratulated myself on this event, and looked forward with pleasure to be able now to attend to the immediate concerns of the colony, which now seemed, in some respects, rather pressing. I therefore lost no time in holding consultation with my dear wife, and then with Diego, with regard to the precedency of the various operations requiring to be done. In less than a month we might expect the rains; the crop was

ready to be taken from the ground, and the schooner's cargo must be housed. After a long discussion with my best helpmate, and many scruples between us both, it was determined to cut away the thicket leading to the cave, and build a storehouse there, from side to side, at the entrance of the recess. So that, in fact, the cave itself would become a very important part of the warehouse, making an inner apartment of the greatest security. Having taken our resolution at last, on this unpleasant resolve, the four carpenters were sent for, and ordered to clear away all the trees and shrubs for the purpose. And, as a first step, the poultry located there, were safely removed to the pen, to be with the rest. Diego was to have the two negro lads for a few days, and Xavier's wife and Derrick's wife permanently; and two of the new negro girls, to assist him in taking up the crop. Captain Drake, with the two New England blacks, was to make a good platform, with pickaxes, near the flag-staff, for the gun-carriage to traverse on; while Martin and Purdy were to repair the craals, and also construct some new fish-pots, and go to the small islands to the north-east, in the canoe, to procure turtle.

Captain Drake completed his work by Thursday evening, having carried up sixty rounds of shot, and twelve rounds of powder. The latter were preserved in a water-proof chest, in which, also, were some matches for firing, and a tinder-box, and stuff to light them, when required. He had placed the tom-pion in the gun, and secured the touch-hole with the leaden apron, before his return; and he asked permission to fire it to-morrow even-

ing, at sunset, with blank cartridge, and then load it for service.

He and I deemed it important to make a survey of the island, as soon as possible. He therefore employed himself on this duty during Friday forenoon, and at sunset on the same evening he fired the gun, to the great terror of some of our people, and therefore to the great amusement of the others. But I was glad to hear the *bull-dog* bark; who might, by the same token, keep an intruding Spaniard or pirate from our door.

Till the end of the week no change was made in our arrangements. Of the negresses, my dear wife had retained Anne, the sister of Harry, to supply the place of Mira, now Martin's wife. Rota was our cook and housekeeper; indeed, she and her husband Diego, were our most useful and faithful people. A bargain was made with the wife and daughter-in-law of Allwood, to wash for the whole colony; and Mira Martin was engaged to mend their clothes. From the day of our return, I kept a regular day-book, in which every one's employment was noted down, and the amount of wages carried to their credit; their rations and other things being charged against them, respectively, male and female: and with this proceeding they were made acquainted; so that every one now felt it to be his or her interest to labour with industry, thereby to earn not only a daily subsistence, but to have something beyond, in credit on the books, to enable them to demand any particular article in store they might wish, as far as their means would go. Rota was cook to the colony, as

well as to ourselves; and she and the washerwomen were paid by contribution; that is, I paid Rota, but a small fractional charge was made to others on the washing account, in the way of polity. The machine was thus set going; and Saturday evening having brought the week to a close, the people were desired to bathe themselves every Sunday morning, and appear dressed at church by ten o'clock; the hour in future was to be announced by the ringing of a large bell, brought from Kingston. My dear wife, as well as myself, had been a good deal perplexed, in arriving at some principle by which the labour of every one should be free, and yet, in the nature of things, compulsory; and we hoped we had now decided right: but resolving to watch the operation of our plan, with a jealous attention as to its justice, and the degree of satisfaction it gave to the people themselves.

Sunday, May 4th.—The bell rang for prayers at ten o'clock, and our congregation numbered twenty-four. Before the service commenced, I said a few words on the gratitude we owed to the God that made us, and the earth on which we tread; and by whose goodness every thing grows, that we eat for food. I then added, that he had ordered one day in seven to be set apart from labour, that we may worship him, asking in prayer all that is beneficial for us, and giving thanks to him in praise for all the blessings with which we are surrounded. Those who could understand me bowed their heads at this, and, after divine service, I told them that we intended to devote part of this day to teach some of them to read, and that such as chose to

learn, might remain with us till their dinner-time — one o'clock. But I thought it well to advise, that the elder people, such as Allwood and his wife, Diego and his wife, Xavier and his wife, Derrick and his wife, should not attempt it; yet, if at any time they should like to try to learn, I could have no objection. The old people seemed satisfied with my remark, but did not at once retire; they stopped a little to see what was to be done. My dear wife brought out her large wooden mounted alphabets; — the men being placed on one side of the hall, and the females on the other; she taking the charge of these, and I of those. I pointed to a big A made on one side of the wooden book (if a piece of board may be so called; and why not "a wooden book," as well as "a horn book;" for such was the sort of book by which we were first taught our letters). I endeavoured to give this first letter a sound as in *father*, considering it less exceptionable than that usually taught with the alphabet. After they had severally, and then together, pronounced it, imitating the sound I gave it, I turned the other side of the board, exhibiting the letter B; and as these symbols were made by myself with chalk, they were readily replaced by others. As I proceeded with my squad, the mistress went on with hers, *pari passu*, as we would say at school. After which we tried their recollection of both letters shown together; and then one after the other, in a dodging manner, assisting them when they were at fault. They took the lesson good-naturedly; sometimes laughing at one another's mistakes, sometimes at their own. The old people seemed

much amused, remaining with us nearly an hour; after which they and Captain Drake went to seek other pursuits admitted by the day. We dismissed our school a little before one o'clock, expressing our pleasure at seeing them so attentive; desiring Mira, who could now read pretty well, to go over the business again under the cotton-tree in the evening. It was curious to observe, as well as satisfactory, how quickly the five young new negroes caught the sounds of the letters. And I may here remark, that we anticipated from this circumstance a good dialect of English among us, as Allan Derrick and his wife, with the Allwoods, were the only individuals that spoke negro. The New England blacks, and the Bermudians, might be said to have a good pronunciation when compared with the Jamaica negro dialect; and so had my Spaniards, Don Diego and his friends.

After the people dined, Captain Drake took as many as chose to go with him for a sail in the Avon; amusing them by coursing about in every direction, on the noble sheet of water that lay open to view before the house. It was therefore pleasant to us all: to those who were enjoying the sailing, and to us on shore looking on so fine a sight. At three o'clock Captain Drake came on shore with his company, and instantly sat down with us to our comfortable dinner, neatly, if not elegantly laid out. I felt particularly happy to-day in the company of our guest, who seemed a gentlemanly young man, and well-informed. Our conversation was sometimes reciprocally instructive, but always agreeable; and I sensibly felt that my young skipper would prove to us

a valuable acquisition. In the evening, we took a walk, and visited Mira with her disciples under the shade of the great tree, now become "the Academic Bower;" and after looking on a while, we strolled through the woodland region; where embarking at the black rock in the schooner's large boat, we were rowed by the two Bermudians, and the New England blacks, to the cocoa-nut grove, which we visited with much pleasure; and returned to coffee, well pleased with all we had seen and done, and retired soon after to our night's repose.

Monday, 5th.—Orders had been issued for every one to rise at daylight; and ourselves taking advantage of this cool and delightful hour, my dear wife and myself walked over to see our desolated thicket, and to give directions for further preparations for the erection of the storehouse. As we crossed the streamlet, we found all the females of Allwood's family already at the general wash, which they were performing nearly in the same way we had done. My dear Eliza praised them for being so early at work; and on quitting them we called to mind the days, not very long passed, when we ourselves were cheerfully employed at the same labour. Captain Drake met us at the rock; and I requested him to suspend the survey for the present, and to superintend the building of the storehouse instead; adding, that the two New Englanders and the two Bermudians would be required as additions to the carpenter's crew: at the same time I put the plan into his hand. He walked up to the spot with us, where I saw an immense pile of trees and shrubs, cut up, and laying to wind-

ward of the plank-house. — “ When these are dry,” said Drake, “ we will stow them in bundles for firewood.” — I thanked him for the thought and the care. We then crossed over the rough surface of the ground, where the thicket had stood, and entered the cave; several pigeons were still roosting there, whose old domain we were now about, alas! to deprive them of entirely. It was here determined that as much soil as could be got, should be dug out, and wheeled away for other use, and so the bottom of the cave be completely cleaned; after which a foot thick of sand should be laid over the whole surface of the place on which the storehouse was to be erected. That done, the building would be commenced, which was to be altogether of wood; that is, the part projecting from the cave, which would comprise a front and roof; for the caverned rocks made two ends and the back, having the cave’s mouth nearly in its centre.

The men were assembled, to begin the work; and having given out particular orders, we returned to the plantation, where we found Diego with his party getting in the Indian corn. My dear wife had given Anna charge of the poultry, to feed them and collect the eggs; and on visiting the pen, we found her with an immense flock of feathered creatures round her, ducks, geese, turkeys, fowls, and Guinea hens. The pigs were grunting in a corner; and the goats, ten in number, including Derrick’s, just let out, were making their way to browse among the bushes on the side of the hill to the southward. The sheep had been conveyed to

to the opposite island, where there was some good feed for them; having a high steep ridge all round, not unlike our own position, but more fertile and extensive.

We returned to breakfast, after making these arrangements for an undertaking important to the comfort of the settlement, but not devoid of pain to ourselves, from the recollection of past events; and talked them over, with varied feelings, until Anna had returned from the pen, and put our breakfast on the table; Rota being similarly employed under the rocks beyond the spring, where the working people were to take their morning meal. I now gave orders to announce the turn in, and turn out of all the parties, by the blowing of a conch-shell at eight o'clock, which had been prepared by Diego for the purpose; that the bell might be reserved to summon only the congregation of the people, on the Lord's day. Captain Drake soon joined us; and during breakfast he and I talked over the business in hand. At nine the shell was again blown; and he repaired, followed by the people, to his station. But I promptly determined that Diego should learn to wind the bugle instead, as the shell rung sounds in my ears I did not like to hear again. — "Then my people are slaves!" said I to myself, as the deep hollow intonations of the shell fell upon my ear — sounds I well remembered to have heard in Jamaica every morning at daybreak, when sleeping at Mr. Dickinson's Penn, to turn out the slave population to task labour. — "I will no more of it," said I to my dear Eliza, who readily entered into my feelings on the sub-

ject, and applauded my resolution.—“ You are right, my Edward,” she replied; “ let us have nothing here to make any of our people feel that they have been bought with our money.” I now hastily called Diego to me, and told him what had been passing in my mind; desiring him to blow the conch no more, but try what he could do with the bugle, which I now took down from the place on which I had suspended it, and gave to him.

Our house began to look very respectable. All our furniture was in, and one of the bedsteads put up. Besides, I might now call it our castle; for the twenty stand of arms, brought from Jamaica, were placed under its roof, in the arm-chest in which they came. I added to them those which I formerly possessed; but I had put those old ones at bottom, so as to have the newest and best at hand. To these latter there were bayonets, and cross-belts, and cartouche-boxes annexed. This arm-chest occupied a corner of our bedroom, and having the cot matrass laid upon it, with a large flag thrown over that, served as a settee; and to us, who once had considered the plank couch in our wooden palace a luxury, this piece of military furniture was very acceptable. At twelve o'clock Diego blew a blast from the bugle, and at one the people dined where they had breakfasted; and at two they resumed their work. We dined at three o'clock; and at six the bugle desired the labour of the day to cease. And thus we continued our arrangement, and carried on our work during the week.

Sunday, 11th. — This sabbath was observed like

the former, in devotion and teaching; but with some little variation in the afternoon amusements.

Monday, 12th.—Every one at work, as on the preceding Monday. But Diego came, to state, that it would require three or four days more to get in all the roots, and vegetables, and corn; and that the shed would not hold the tenth part of what were already taken up, and piled here and there on the ground, covered with corn trash. I told him to proceed, and I would take the matter into consideration. Great progress had been made with the storehouse; and, as many hands make light work, it was expected to be finished by the end of this week. At least it would be up, and the roof covered with boards, on which the shingles could be placing while the stores were getting in. But quick as this promised to be, we feared we must expect the heavy rains before it could be even so far completed. However, as it was of the utmost importance to secure the fruits of the earth, I offered the hall of the mansion for a temporary store; reserving only a corner for our dinner table. Accordingly we sent the spare chairs into the bedroom; and Diego's party began immediately to carry and stow corn, yams, cocoas, tobacco, and other vegetable matters, into the back part of the hall, the shed being already full. By Wednesday, he had finished; and then, with a zeal which acted well on those under him, hastened with his men to assist at the storehouse. I directed Captain Drake to have a sloping platform from the cave's mouth down to the floor of the wooden building, immediately laid; and all the packages, and boxes, and

casks, with articles perishable by wet, conveyed into the cave, where there was ample room indeed for the whole schooner's cargo. This was all done by Thursday at noon, without interfering with the carpenters at work : nothing being left out but the barrels of beef, pork, pitch, tar, and the like, besides the crates of crockery ware. We had run a race with the weather. On Friday morning the storehouse was boarded over, and the remainder of the things housed. In the afternoon I desired Captain Drake to moor the schooner in the bay, off the woodland region ; also to get the coals out of the Avon, and moor her likewise ; to unbend the sails of both, and stow them below deck in their respective vessels ; and to strike the yards and topmasts of the schooner, and the masts of the Avon ; this also was done. On the following day the rain came down in torrents ; so that we had much reason to congratulate ourselves on our activity and foresight.

The rain fell in heavy sheets of water for two or three hours, during which broad streams of it ran round the house in every direction, notwithstanding the thirstiness of the ground. The sky cleared up suddenly in the afternoon, and the ground appeared as dry on the surface as if it had not rained a drop. During the weight of the torrents, every body was made prisoner in the place it caught him, so that Captain Drake did not make his appearance to dinner till half-past four o'clock. But as the wet had put the cooking fire out, we, and all the people, were obliged to make the best sort of repast we could. And as we knew, by the experience of

last year, that the rains fell generally at middle day and in the night, we lost no time, when it became fair, in cooking provision for the morrow.

The Avon being only half decked, Drake sent four men off as soon as the rains ceased, to bale her out; on their return, they reported that several hog-heads of water had been collected in that small vessel during the three hours' rain: however, it had washed her clean, leaving no mark of the coals, except where the dirt had settled at the bottom.

I enjoyed my coffee and cigar very much this evening, in talking over our affairs with my dear wife and Mr. Drake; and the air being delightfully cool, added to my pleasure and to theirs. However, as the season now stopped work of one sort, I sent for Diego, and told him to serve out some dried palm-leaves to the people, to be ready for Monday; and employ them during the rains in making hats and baskets; and this evening to take a batch of mullet.

Sunday, 18th. — The bell rang for prayers at the usual hour, and the school was dismissed by twelve o'clock; just time enough to escape imprisonment from the rain, which fell soon after the people had been sent away.

Monday, 19th. — It had poured in torrents nearly all night, with some thunder and squalls of wind, but the vessels had not driven; and all the buildings kept out the rain, excepting the great store-house at the cave, which was as yet only boarded over. Captain Drake visited the vessels in the morning with a few men, while the other people

were occupied at the work allotted to them. The weather continued in this way for five days, but cleared up entirely on Thursday the 22d; not half the space of time the rains lasted the preceding year; but I think they were heavy in proportion, and that quite as much water fell. Diego now advised that the whole stock of poultry should be allowed to go at large over the plantation grounds, to pick up the grubs that soon would be in swarms on the ground. Martha, one of the negro girls, was appointed to herd them, as their numbers from the late hatchings were very great; of ducks and fowls there were more than a hundred of each kind. Yet I did not wish this abundant store to be diminished; it being the intention of my dear wife and myself, to divide them among the people, as soon as we could locate their families in separate habitations. And now that the coast was all clear of intruders, a colony of the ducks was sent back to their old quarters at the fountain under the face of the promontory; and an additional hatch being made for some geese, half a dozen of these were sent also, that they might enjoy an element in which they delighted, and that we might see them now and then swimming about the shores of our lake-like harbour.

The carpenters resumed their work as soon as the boards of the storehouse were sufficiently dry to put on the shingles; which operation was more tedious as to time than all they had done. Captain Drake bent the sails of the Avon, and in a few days resumed his survey; taking with him the two new negro boys, John and Harry, in addition to

the two New Englanders, it being of importance to make sailors of the boys as soon as possible. My cares meanwhile went to the agriculture; and my trusty bailiff, Diego, told me that the yams and most other things near us, excepting the maize (Indian corn), had not sun enough at our plantation, owing to the shade being cast over the ground for so many hours in the morning by the promontory, during all the year: he therefore recommended a plantation to be made on the opposite island, on the grounds to which we had sent the sheep, and to move them further along to the northward. Accordingly, he and the Bermudians were sent there with felling axes, to clear away such trees as might stand in the way. And after the storehouse was shingled over, the four carpenters were despatched to expedite that business in conjunction with the two Bermudians; while Diego returned to superintend matters at home. Captain Drake and his crew gave two days of their time, to remove the provisions in the plantation storehouse, round to the great storehouse of the cave; previous to a serious commencement of his survey of the islands. The plantation storehouse being thus cleared, all the corn and roots, fruits and tobacco, were immediately transported thither from the hall of the mansion, to the great improvement of our comfort.

A boat took the men, with their provisions, to the opposite shore every morning; and when they returned in the evening, they always brought back a good freight of firewood; by which we accumulated an ample supply during the business: but

after they had felled the trees, and cut off their branches for fuel, the trunks were removed by means of the timber carriage to one side of the bay, for any future purpose. While a party were clearing the ground at this place, Diego, with as many hands as he could collect, planted Indian corn, and pumpkins, and melon seeds, and sowed Indian kale, and calaloo, and ocras, within the range of our own plantation. The sugar cane we had put in soon after our arrival, was now all but ripe, and the pine-apples had nearly come to perfection. To this little pinery, had been added some of the suckers they had thrown out from time to time; and of late, also the tops of such of the pines as we had eaten, lately brought from Jamaica. The plantain and banana suckers, which had been put into moist places in the rock, near the silk-cotton-tree spring, were thriving very well; and some of the wild banana plants, that Diego had collected last year in one of his Sunday excursions, now began to show fruit. Spades and hoes were given to Allwood's family, and a quantity of melon seeds of both sorts, and pumpkins, which they were desired to sow in the grounds between the spring and the rocky point, to be handy for themselves or any one else resident in the plank-house; and they were much pleased with the idea, as it promised advantage to themselves.—By Saturday the 31st, Captain Drake had completed his survey of the islands, and presented me with a chart, of which he kept a duplicate; and both being remarkably well done, I was so much pleased that I presented him with a couple of doubloons.

Having put away my chart, I asked my dear Eliza if she would like to make a visit to the opposite island, and dine there under a tree; that Captain Drake and myself might have an opportunity of seeing the place. Such a proposition was too much in unison with her own mind, to require a moment's deliberation. A basket was got ready, and presently well stored for the occasion: and without much delay, she and I and Mr. Drake, accompanied by Diego and her damsel Anna, 'squired by Fidele, marched down to the boat; in which, with a fine, fair, light breeze, we ran across in little more than fifteen or twenty minutes. Having landed, Captain Drake and myself visited the woodmen, who had nearly completed their work; they had cleared about twelve acres: some of the trees cut down were of considerable size, and many of them prime timber, mahogany, cedar, tamarind, and yellow-wood; but, on the whole, the ground had been little encumbered. Diego, who knew the place, begged permission to carry the basket, and show his Señora Donna a fine, smooth, shady seat under the branches of a noble tamarind, they had left standing on the northern side of the bay, at the foot of the Sugarloaf Hill, close to a fine run of water. My dear wife readily desired that I might allow her to proceed with our faithful Diego, so that Captain Drake and myself might have plenty of time to inspect the work done by the wood cutters. When the lady and her damsel were seated, Diego returned to us; and together we then visited every part of the cleared grounds, and saw that the soil was good. After this exploration was finished, we

betook ourselves to join in the *fête champêtre* under the shade of the wide spreading tamarind tree; the contents of the basket were spread forth; and we sat round them on the ground, taking what there was with an appetite and an enjoyment not felt at a regular dinner table. When our repast was finished we walked to a little distance into a narrow pass, when our pleasure was not a little heightened by Fidele killing two iguanas. I was glad to see this; for I had feared his courage had received a lasting damper from the rough treatment he met with in his encounter with the peccaries. The day being thus finished delightfully, we returned to our plantation residence; the woodcutters following us in the Avon with a cargo of firewood.

Sunday, June 1st. — We were able this day to give ample time to the church service; also to our Sunday's teaching: it was like the dew of Hermon on the Land of Promise. Our God was with us; and we saw, with delight, our people improve in knowledge and in devotion.

Monday, 2d. — The moisture from the ground was quickly exhaling, so that I feared we should be late in putting in our yams and coccos. Besides, we had brought a quantity of cuttings of the cassava plant from Jamaica, which hitherto had been preserved in sand, and which ought to have been planted before this time; we had also some bushels of Guinea corn to sow; meaning all these articles of food to stock the grounds of our new plantation. Afraid of losing more of the season, I sent for all the people early in the morning, and told them, so much were we pressed for time, that every one,

without distinction, must lend a hand ; all other business being suspended : and I requested Captain Drake to head the party to the opposite island, to see that the grounds were laid out with some regularity for the different crops ; and to take the advice of Diego about the places best adapted to each. These orders were cheerfully acquiesced in by all ; every person feeling an individual interest in the success of the undertaking ; besides, they were kept in a temper of mind that rendered them obedient, with a willing spirit.

After breakfast they took boat, with their implements ; eleven men, besides women, with Captain Drake to superintend their operations ; leaving Rota alone with us, to cook their provisions and ours. On their return in the evening, I regaled the whole party with coffee ; also desiring Diego to serve out a supply of home-made cigars to the men.

On Wednesday, my dear wife, Fidele, and myself, joined Drake and the agriculturists, leaving Rota and Lion to take care of the garrison. We took a supply of shaddock, and orange, and lime seeds with us, and seeds of the capsicum and bird pepper ; and amused ourselves in planting these in appropriate situations. The situation of this new plantation was altogether beautiful. It was on part of a gentle slope, nearly half a mile in extent every way ; having an amphitheatre of steep rocky eminences enclosing and adorning it, terminating only at the water's edge ; these steeps being beautifully wooded, with varieties of the palm and other trees, among which we saw flocks of parroquets and some

other birds. "My own love!" said I to my dear Eliza, as we stood under the shade of a magnificent palm, on the highest part of the cleared ground, "I hope to see a comfortable house built here, at no very distant day, and inhabited by some of your dear friends and mine from England."—"We want nothing else, dearest Edward," she replied, "to complete our happiness."—Then pausing a little, she added, "No; I should be ungrateful to God to allow that wish to pass. I do not want even that to complete my happiness. I want nothing, my honoured husband," said she, tenderly pressing my hand, "but you, and the Spirit of Him we desire to love.—But," resumed she, smiling sweetly (for my heart was too full to speak immediately), "I shall, nevertheless, rejoice to see our friends; and to see them here, as you so kindly and fondly anticipate."—"Sweet angel!" was all my reply.

We now bent our steps towards the people at work. Allwood's family of women were employed at the least laborious occupation, chiefly in carrying the cut roots and corn to the men planting; but all were cheerful, and greeted us cordially when we came among them. In the evening, we regaled the party, as on the preceding day; and by the end of the week this great business was so far completed, that Diego undertook to finish it, with only the two New England blacks, and John and Harry.

Sunday, 8th. — We observed this day with little deviation from the preceding sabbath.

Monday, 9th. — Having accomplished every thing that required the whole strength of the settlement,

I proposed to Captain Drake that he should undertake a voyage to Kingston in a week or two, to bring us some supplies of building materials; and that we might contribute something from the island towards paying for them, I suggested that he should take Martin and Purdy in the canoe, with provisions, and a sail to make a tent; and endeavour to catch some turtle, where they had been seen in abundance, among our small islands on the north of the eastern reef. He did not hesitate to comply with my request; indeed, I could not have found another man so well suited, by talents and disposition, to do the various things his peculiar situation and ours required.

The carpenters were now directed to build a house on the N.E. of the mansion, corresponding in site and size to the plantation storehouse; which, as I noticed before, stood on the S.W. end of us; and I marked out the ground for it, which was immediately set about. In the evening, Captain Drake set off with the canoe to try his skill in turtling. The women, generally, were engaged in their respective habitations, in various useful employments; but Martha and Mary, two of the young negresses, were now both appointed to take care of the poultry; feeding them, and collecting their eggs, some of which were distributed every day among our people; and as young broods of ducks and chickens were daily coming forth, these girls had quite enough to do, and my dear wife also, who carefully registered all that was going on in their department.

On Tuesday morning, the canoe returned with

five turtle, and had succeeded in turning six more : these were put into the craal. But Drake said he must take the Avon at the next trip, with the canoe in tow, there being safe anchorage for her between two small islands. The two negro lads were therefore withdrawn from Diego's party, to accompany him ; and the Bermudians, with Hacintha and Priscilla, sent to the new plantation in their stead. The Avon, with the canoe in tow, went out of the harbour at noon ; and in about an hour after, we walked to the plank-house, to have the pleasure of seeing this fine boat sail up towards her destination between the beach and the reef, till we lost sight of her by an intervening projection of the main island.

On Thursday morning, Drake made his appearance round the point, and ran alongside of the black rock, near to which the enlarged craal was situated. My dear wife took my arm, and we strolled to the landing-place to meet our friend, whose success far exceeded my expectations. He had brought eighteen fine turtle in the Avon, and five smaller ones in the canoe. After dinner, the party set out again ; and returned on Saturday morning, with the same number in the canoe, and twenty-two in the lugger.

On Friday, Diego reported his work at the new plantation completed, and that he had driven the sheep to the pasturage of the great bay to the northward. This capital feeding-place was separated from the new plantation by a narrow pass — the same in which Fidele had killed the iguana — between the ledge of rocks on the point, and the high conical hill, that stands immediately to the westward of

them. Early on Saturday morning, my dear Eliza and myself visited his work, in the schooner's small boat, rowed by Diego, and Ned Hall, one of the New England blacks. The field did him great credit; it was well dug; and the divisions, planned by Captain Drake, regularly planted. It must be confessed, there were many stumps of trees protruding here and there, but it would have been impossible to have grubbed them up this season. We next walked along the pass between the rock and the hill, until we opened the bay. There appeared much sand all along, extending, perhaps, fifty yards inland; but beyond this, towards the rising ground, there seemed to be good herbage for three miles beyond the place on which we stood. On our return we stopped to admire this commodious spot. Either side of the pass was bounded by a wall of rock: on one hand, that which stretched into the sea as a rock; on the other, the rocky base of the Sugarloaf Hill, wooded to the summit; at the foot of which, the fine spring of transparent water ran with a full stream into a little harbour of the sea, formed by the lateral projection of the rock that forms one side of the pass, on which we had just turned our backs. The contemplation of this beautiful spot induced me again to remark to my wife, how delightful this situation would be for some of our family, should they please to join us. "My dear Edward," said she, in reply, "I think we should all reside on one island, that we may be able at all times to communicate with each other: for although the channel that would divide us may not exceed a couple of miles, yet circum-

stances might arise which would render such an interruption to immediate communication extremely painful. And, indeed, I have had it in my mind for some days past to suggest to you this consideration, that, if you think well of it, you might alter your plans a little with regard to the places intended for settling some of the people." I reflected a while on what she said; but some possible events soon crossing my mind, "You are right, my Eliza," I replied: "I will adopt your principle in locating the people, and send some of the families to this place; and I will reserve Peccary Field and East Field, on our own island, for any branches of our family that may join us. And if they do not come, it will be time enough, after every other place is occupied, to give those lands to other settlers." We returned home just as the Avon was entering the harbour, and had the pleasure to see the turtle landed and put into the craal.

Our late exertions deserved a little extra rest and recreation; so I proclaimed a half holiday, and a turtle-feast for all hands under the great tree. A calipee was dressed for ourselves, such as was never seen at the mansion-house of the Mayor of Bristol, nor even at a Lord Mayor's table; the green fat being nearly three inches thick on the white meat: whereas, by the time these creatures reach England, after fasting nearly two months, the fat, if not quite gone, is reduced to nearly nothing; and, instead of it, the greenish gelatinous part of the fins and calipatch are palmed upon the epicure for that delicious substance, which they only know by name, and taste in idea. We

regaled ourselves at the mansion with lime punch, and I sent a fair allowance to the people. After dinner, the chart which Captain Drake had made was laid on the table. After looking attentively over it for some time, my dear wife requested to give a name to the islands. "The group," said she, "we have already called *Seaward Islands*: but in honour of our good King, and old England, let us name this on which we are, as being the principal, *Saint George's Island*! — and the one opposite, after my dear husband, *Edward's Island*!" Captain Drake applauded the nomination; and I showed my approval, by merely saying, "Thank you, love." She brought the pen and ink, and with her own hand wrote the names on Captain Drake's chart, and on my duplicate. "Now, dear Eliza," said I, before the ink is dry, let us call this majestic promontory, under whose shade we have dwelt so long in peace and security, *Drake's Promontory*!" She smiled, and instantly wrote down the name, for which he expressed himself as highly honoured. We then drank the King's health; my own; Captain Drake's; my dear wife's; with all our friends and relations in England; and, finally, "Prosperity to the settlement:" finishing the day in witnessing the hilarity and mirth of our settlers, round the great tree, in dance and song, enjoying their coffee and cigars.

Sunday, 15th. — We assembled at the usual hour to prayers; and it was delightful to perceive the increasing intelligence and devotion of our motley congregation; also the variety of intonations falling on our ear, from their united responses to the several

portions of the Litany. However, I must own, some were almost too ridiculous to hear with gravity; especially "Spare us, good Lord;" as few of them could articulate the *S*. But they were in earnest, and any thing else was of little consequence. In the afternoon, Mira held her school under the cotton-tree, the sight of which never failed to afford us inexpressible delight.

Monday, 16th. — Captain Drake set off again on his turtling expedition, taking the two New Englanders and the two lads. The carpenters resumed their work; Diego and the Bermudians employed themselves in putting the storehouses to rights, so as to be able to lay our hands on the different packages as they might be wanted, and afterwards in restowing the produce of the late harvest. The women, excepting Allwood's family, took it in turn to grind maize, with the large wheel-mill brought from Kingston; of which a portion was to be used daily, to save flour, as I found that sort of bread would be too expensive for ordinary and daily consumption.

On Tuesday, the turtlers returned with twenty-six, and on Thursday with twenty-five; so that we now had one hundred and five in the craal. Soon after their return, the schooner was hauled to the rock, and all the bricks, with the spare anchors and cables, taken out. After which, she was ballasted with sand, to be well wetted, to give it solidity, so that it might not shift when the vessel heeled at sea: and on this bed of wet sand the turtles were laid on their backs; in which situation, buckets of sea water would be thrown over them,

two or three times a day, during the passage. On Friday evening, the sails were bent, and the vessel ready for sea. No work was done on Saturday. I settled accounts with every one in the island up to the day, allowing them reasonable wages according to their respective situations, and charging a moderate price for their subsistence, so as to give a daily balance, more or less, to each. My honest slave carpenter, Derrick, was surprised and overjoyed when I allowed him a pittance of wages also. Captain Drake and the New Englanders were paid differently. This being done (for which I had been already prepared with calculations), the people were told the schooner should bring from Kingston, free of charge for the freight, whatever they chose to send money to purchase. This announcement created a great stir among them; and poor Drake soon found enough to do to make their respective memorandums, and receive their monies. The following day being the sabbath, we dedicated it, as heretofore, to the more especial observance of moral and religious duties; permitting every one to indulge themselves in innocent amusement after duly performing the duties of the day.

CHAP. III.

MONDAY, June 23d. — The men began shipping the turtle at break of day; and soon after, Captain Drake waited on me for orders. I gave him letters to Mr. Green, at Kingston; and letters for Messrs. Perry and Co., and for my uncle; and also letters from my dear wife and myself, to our friends in Gloucestershire. — “Put those in your pocket,” said I; “and let us look over the list I have made out for supplies required from Kingston.” We conned it over; and after making a few additions, he put this paper in his pocket also. The list embraced all sorts of lumber; that is, squared timber for building, planks, boards, shingles, &c.; then followed other items: — two canoes; a marble muller and slab, to grind our cacao into chocolate; a coffee roaster; glass cut in squares for the windows; Spanish whiting, and linseed oil, to make putty. Then, one ram and six ewes; a basket cage of live pigeons; some plants of grafted fruit in tubs, bespoke by Diego in April; also a further supply of plaintain suckers; kernels of the Avocado pear, and of the Barbadoes palm, and some other vegetable propagants. As many bricks as could conveniently be stowed under the cargo were to be brought. A memorandum was added, instructing Captain Drake to obtain a free negro mason or bricklayer, if possible, to settle among us; such a person being much wanted; and to purchase

four healthy young lads, to assist us in our various operations. A large clock to stand in the hall was added to the list. I estimated the cost of this cargo at 1200 dollars ; and calculating on the turtle as averaging 8 dollars a piece, I took credit on their account for 800 dollars, and gave Captain Drake 50 doubloons, which were equivalent to 800 more, so as to secure the supplies required. At sunrise our colours were hoisted ; and at nine o'clock the gallant Porghee sailed out of harbour, through the northern passage — the same through which she had entered — with a fine breeze from the east.

The carpenters had now completed the house on the N.E. of the mansion, of the same size with the storehouse on the opposite side, but considerably larger than the houses of Diego and Xavier. In the absence of the Bermudians, who had gone with Drake, Purdy's wife remained with her friends at the plank-house ; and Mira, Martin's wife, with her parents Diego and Rota. Diego's family was now moved, *pro tempore*, into the new house, while the carpenters were employed in stripping off the canvass sides and covering from the old ones, which they began to replace with boards and shingles ; and after this was accomplished, Xavier's residence had a similar refit. Meanwhile the women were set to various occupations ; none being permitted to beidle. The palm leaves were worked into hats, the stems into brooms and baskets ; besides, there was washing, and sewing, and cooking, and the grinding of maize, when nothing else could be found to do. Diego caught fish, and brought home

cocoa nuts, and gave out provisions, and looked to the plantations; and reported every evening on the state of affairs. Of all these matters I and my dear helpmate kept our registers, and our accounts likewise. And sometimes, in a leisure hour, we strolled out together along the beach, or through the trees, with one of our favourite numbers of the *Spectator* in my hand; (and how often did we thank, over and over again, in our minds, my Eliza's kind father, for having given to her the few loose numbers he had preserved of that invaluable weekly paper!) We dwelt particularly on the parts where Mr. Addison points out so movingly to the reader, the poet John Milton's description of the sweet innocence, and therefore perfect felicity, of our first parents in the garden of Eden, with no other human society than themselves. We read over and over again these passages, comparing them with our own extraordinary lot; and feeling happy, most happy, in this our almost solitude, having God and ourselves! yet, with a few round us, who shared our peace, and all the good his providence had so bountifully bestowed.

Thus we went on, and by the 7th of July the two huts or houses were boarded and shingled; and Diego and Xavier took possession of their respective dwellings again. I now told Allwood, and Manus his son, that they might occupy the new house for a time, if they pleased; but as it was my intention to give them both land, on which they were to build for themselves, I thought it might not be worth while to move them from the plank-house, as the women of their family washed for the

settlers. Allwood said he would do as I pleased ; but he wished to know what land he might have. I told him four acres for himself and four for his son, in separate allotments ; and that each must build a house on his lot, but large, or small, as he liked ; only the grounds belonging to it must be fenced round with hurdles, to keep their stock within their own bounds ; and that no tree, excepting such as might be in the way of their enclosures, should be cut down without my leave. I then proposed placing them on the opposite bay, which was gladly accepted. The next day Allwood and Manus accompanied me in the canoe, rowed by Diego and Xavier : the former my privy counsellor. After a little consideration, I marked out the site of their respective houses, on two contiguous allotments of land, part of the ground that had been lately cleared and cultivated. The father and son were highly pleased, and immediately set about erecting a temporary shed for themselves. After which we returned ; and on the following morning, they, being furnished with tools and provisions, and the loan of the schooner's small boat, left behind purposely for our use, set off to their tasks, to return in the evening. In this way, they took with them whatever they stood in need of day by day, until they completed their work, which was duly noted down in our day-book.

Xavier and Derrick were now employed in putting a coat of paint on the storehouse at the cave's mouth, and on all the buildings at our plantation, excepting the mansion, which was to remain in its present state for some time. The goats and poultry

were let out every morning, and brought back to the pen in the evening: the latter were very numerous, and very noisy; particularly the Guinea hens, whose loud shrill note was scarcely bearable. Rota continued to be a treasure to us; and, by her example and my dear wife's instruction, Anna had become highly useful, and gradually became intelligent and completely civilized. Rota, like a true Spaniard, was a great observer of forms; always showing great respect for her mistress, whom she never failed to address as "*La Señora*:" — Anna copied her in this, as in all other matters, with surprising exactness; and we thought it prudent not to check this feeling in our dependents.

Day after day, week after week, we went on with these every-day avocations; observing, as formerly described, the sabbath; and without any thing particular occurring until Wednesday, the 16th of July, when we had the pleasure to see the schooner enter the harbour from the northward; which welcome appearance was greeted by hoisting our colours. At two o'clock she came to an anchor, and in a few minutes after, we had the happiness to receive letters from England. — After shaking hands with Captain Drake, and congratulating him on his return, I put a few questions to him respecting the success of his voyage, which he answered without any circumlocution, — a quality much to be esteemed at all times, but more especially when the mind of the questioner is anxious to proceed to other matters. My Eliza, after desiring Rota to get Captain Drake some dinner, had already gone into her room with her dear letters from Awbury

in her hand, to read and enjoy them unobserved by a stranger; and the board being now spread for Drake, I took a chair aside to the further part of the hall, and commenced on my own budget: Perry and Co.'s first. The treasure and bills had arrived safe, which was announced by a more than business-like letter. They had paid Captain James 400*l.* for freight; and after defraying other charges, and paying a trifling commission, they had funded 56,000*l.* money in the three per cents South Sea stock at 83, being in stock 67,424*l.*, leaving in their hand 1092*l.* at my disposal; having made nearly 2000*l.* more by the doubloons, than I should have done by converting them into bills at Jamaica: which shows that the bills should have been given at a very trifling premium, not above 2½ per cent. This information was a source of great satisfaction, although the possible result had never disquieted me a moment; but, in its consummation, I obtained the certain means of doing every thing our best wishes could desire. After I had read this letter, I hastened to my dear wife, and communicated its contents, which in their way were altogether gratifying. But she was not long in directing my attention to a letter from her much loved, and deservedly revered father; which commenced by giving praise to Almighty God for our deliverance from shipwreck, and for his wonderful Providence towards us since that event. He received the present his beloved child had sent him, with the same feelings that she had in giving it; but he hoped before his eyes closed on this world to embrace her once more! Her sisters also wrote

most affectionately, and concluded by saying, she must not be surprised if one of them were to take us at our word, and pay us a visit. My letters from my family, which I now opened and read, were equally gratifying. In one of these, my brother expressed himself as determined to join me as soon as possible. But there was yet another letter, and that was from my uncle, which I just glanced at, and then put by for a while; having instantly perceived something in its tenour I could not at once make out. However, we read it attentively in the evening; but for his sake I will not repeat it. I will suppose he was so puzzled by what I had written, and what he had heard of money being remitted to Awbury, that he did not know what to think, and therefore could not know what to write. Had he been made acquainted with the freight I sent to England in the frigate, his brain would have been completely addled.

Captain Drake, in the mean time, left the mansion; but returned by five o'clock, with the four fine young new negro lads, whom he had had the manly propriety to clothe decently in sailors' jackets and trowsers. The poor youths stood before the door, perhaps pondering on their fate, perhaps careless or reckless of the future: but, lest they might possess any of those feelings common to civilized man, I desired Anna to give each of them a small wheaten cake, and to tell them to behave well, and they should be kindly treated. They all understood her, being from her own country; and they leaped for joy when she spoke to them, and at the mark of future kindness they received from her hand.

When they went away, Captain Drake handed me Mr. Green's letter, which was short, but inclosing the invoice and receipt for the cost. All the things desired had been procured, and our captain had been quite successful in all his commissions, excepting obtaining the mason. He had made his passage to Kingston, in the short period of six days, and did not lose a turtle. On his arrival he found a ready market for them, at something more than we had anticipated; having received for the hundred and five turtle, 850 dollars. He paid 600 dollars for the four negro lads, and 70 dollars for the seven sheep; and the two canoes cost 50 dollars each. So that our turtle cargo covered all these charges, and something over. The amount of the invoice was 304 dollars: so, after paying all this, and some other incidental expenses, he brought me back 25 doubloons out of the 50 with which I had entrusted him.

We had a great deal of interesting conversation over our coffee and cigar; amongst which he told us, that Mr. Green had been very civil to him; but very inquisitive; that he observed we were "the strangest people he ever had met with!" and he threw out many hints, in half joke, that he suspected we were carrying on a contraband trade with the Spanish main, if not some other game he would not name: for he could not in any other way, he said, account for Mr. Seaward having so much money. Drake had humoured this idea by a mysterious manner and equivocal answers; saying, however, with a laugh, "that if at any time he chose to pay the pirates' nest a visit, we should be happy to see him,

and would give him hospitality." This account made my dear wife and myself quite merry. We could not refrain from laughing outright at some parts of our friend's detail; particularly when he repeated a remark that he said was always in Mr. Green's mouth, when talking to him on the subject — "But what was that large gun for, then?"

The moment the schooner came to an anchor, Diego had got the plantain suckers on shore, and lost no time in planting them near the little spring above the silk-cotton-tree; just where some time ago he and Xavier had cleared away the brushwood from before that delightful little urn of refreshing water. The suckers were sufficient in number to make a double row, leaving an avenue to the approach, which in time would prove a beautiful as well as useful plantation, usually called in Jamaica a plantain walk, on account of its cool and large extended foliage: and when he reported to me in the evening what he had done, I commended him warmly.

On the following morning the seven sheep were conveyed by boat to the Long Bay pasture on Edward's Island, to join the other flock; and as soon as breakfast was over, I requested Captain Drake to deliver all the little commissions to the people, which they had sent for by him, before we would begin to unload the general cargo. He lost no time in complying with my request; and a curious scene it was, especially among the women: but they were all more than satisfied; they were well pleased also with what "the good massa Captain had done." As to their commissions, many were useless, and others

foolish; but as the people really had every thing here they should desire, and they were requested not to send for live stock of any kind, nothing better than trumpery could be expected, among which looking-glasses and earrings had not been forgotten; and as all these were to be admired, it may readily be imagined there was no work done to-day, after the sheep had been transported to the opposite side.

The new house lately finished on our plantation, was allotted to Diego and his wife, with his son-in-law Martin, and his wife, for the present; that his former dwelling might be occupied by the four new negro lads, to whom my dear wife had given certain patriarchal names — Abel, Noah, Jacob, David. Captain Drake made the Porghee's cabin his headquarters; and the two New Englanders, with John and Harry, the black sailor boys, were led to understand that they must consider the steerage of that vessel as their proper abode.

On Friday we began to unload; and as a first-fruits from the voyage, the clock I had sent for was fixed up in the great hall. The marble slab for bruising cacao was placed on a stand at the back of the great tree; to the trunk of which, in the same direction, the corn-mill had been previously fixed: a pleasant and commodious situation for the operations they were to perform; an ample shade over head; a fine spring of water close at hand. Rota was glad to see the coffee-roaster; for hitherto it had been a tedious operation. The two canoes, either of which two men could manage well, and one man tolerably, were drawn on the beach; and the

crates of glass, and other things, conveyed to the large warehouse. Some fine fruit-tree grafts, planted in little tubs, were for the present brought into the hall of the mansion, and a very large supply of fruits into our store-room. By Saturday night the lumber was all on shore, piled up in due order; and as the bricks served as ballast to the schooner, they were allowed for a while to remain on board.

Sunday, 20th.—When the bell rang we all assembled at prayers. The four patriarchs attended; and while they did as they saw others do, they seemed happy in finding themselves in a situation of equality with all around them. After prayers the business of teaching commenced, when these new scholars were turned over to Martin and Purdy to be taught their alphabet.

Monday, 21st.—The fruit trees, eight in number, were now put into the ground, tubs and all for the present, near the sugar-canes, to remain there until they could be transplanted. This gave me occasion to observe that the canes were nearly ripe, and might be cut. However, that could not be done, with the view of propagating them, until the next rains. Some of our pine-apples also were ready for eating; and all the suckers and tops, lately put in to extend our pinery, were doing well. The whole side and bottom of the little dell looked delightfully. The variety, the beauty of the several parts, now covered with culinary vegetables and Indian corn, produced a generally pleasing effect, as viewed from the door of our mansion, or from the grounds immediately adjacent. In the afternoon we visited the new plantation on the opposite island,

attended by Captain Drake and Diego, and were well pleased to see one of the houses completely finished, and the other in progress; all the plants of every description greatly forward, which when Diego saw, he felt rather vexed and ashamed that he had not visited them sooner with the hoe; therefore next morning he took all the men with him, twelve and himself, and before night they went over the ground, dressing it clear of weeds, and loosing the earth about the young roots of the cultivated plants; and henceforth he was determined, he said, to look more closely after that plantation: on which I told him to consider the four young men just arrived, as his assistants in the work.

On the return of the hoeing party on Wednesday evening, I sent for Purdy, who, as has been stated, had married Allwood's daughter, and asked him if he would like to have a house and grounds near to his kinsfolk on Edward's Island. The question pleased him; but he did not seem quite sure that his wife's father and brother "would like to make a house for him." — "They shall do it for you, Purdy," said I; "if they will not do it for love, they will do it for money. But I have no doubt, if I find you materials, which I will do, they will not be backward in doing their part for you." And I must do Allwood and his son the justice to say, when I spoke to them on the subject, they did not hesitate a moment. The next day we passed over, and marked out the site of Purdy's house, in a line with theirs, so as to give each a plot of four acres of land attached. The front line of every man's lot being one hundred and ten yards, and the depth one hundred and seventy-six yards, in form of an oblong

square ; the front of these three lots just occupied the frontage of the cleared ground ; there being still a considerable space uncleared at either end, and about one hundred yards between the lots and the beach ; and, on an average, as much between them and the foot of the hills behind them, which, however, was in the form of a bow.

As we were now somewhat at leisure, I determined to commence building on the Peccary Field, for any of our relatives that might join us ; and I requested Captain Drake to superintend the work. My gentle-hearted wife bore no enmity to the peccaries ; and, foreseeing their destruction in this design, expressed some sorrow respecting them, requesting the Captain, if possible, to drive them back to some other part of the island, and not kill them. Captain Drake promised all grace in his power to these fierce little natives ; but after he had heard my story, he did not choose to go unarmed.

On the following day, taking four men in the boat, with Lion, a couple of muskets, and four pikes, thus prepared, we set forth to fix on the spot most eligible for the contemplated building, and mark it out agreeable to a plan I took with me in my pocket ; my Eliza for once desiring not to accompany me, fearing to witness what might happen to the peccaries. We landed at the bottom of the creek, amusing ourselves here a while in securing a dozen or two of the crayfish that swarmed close to the shore, just where the run of fresh water falls into the sea. That done, we left the boat there, and took up the men to the Peccary Field, giving them each a pike. And in a short time I fixed on

a rising slope, about a quarter of a mile west of the little fresh water brook. This spot occupied the centre of the open ground: I say open, because the trees here were few and large. On this site a space of forty-eight feet by thirty-six was marked out, so as to allow four bedrooms, two on each side, with two saloons, for sitting-rooms, between. We had nearly finished our business, when the advance of a herd of peccaries intruded themselves; but Lion, being a quiet, though powerful dog, took little notice of them, as they showed no disposition to attack us or him; rather, indeed, seeming disposed to make acquaintance with us, and particularly with the dog; but one of them being somewhat rude in his caresses, Lion gave him a turn over, and a battle instantly began. The dog was engaged by three or four of them at the same instant, one of which he pinned to the ground; but the others, finding themselves unmolested, attacked him so furiously and effectually with their tusks, that the blood was seen streaming from his sides and shoulders: their numbers increased every minute, and he was beset on all sides; so that if we had not quickly run to his assistance, large and powerful as he was, they soon must have destroyed him. The blacks were desired to charge the little desperadoes with their pikes; yet not until many of them were killed did the rest make off. We pursued the retreating herd into the wood; but not a musket was fired, for fear of alarming her we had left behind at the plantation. The strong parts of the slain beasts were immediately cut out, to render their flesh eatable; and, after having satisfactorily

completed the object on which we went, the party returned before sunset, with a cargo of live crayfish and dead peccaries.

On Friday morning the Avon was loaded with building materials, the timber carriage, and pioneers' tools, for the Peccary shore ; having on board Xavier and Derrick, and the two New England blacks, and the two sailor negro boys ; Purdy being sent to assist his friends at the new plantation on Edward's Island. Diego found plenty of work for himself and his troop ; so that we required a man at a call to be with us, who could paddle one of the small canoes any where that might be required ; and I fixed on Martin for this purpose, and to visit the look-out at the flag-staff. In this way we proceeded, every one in his calling ; sometimes taking away Purdy for a day from his friends, and sending him, with Martin, in the large canoe, for a supply of turtle ; by which I saved some of our salted provisions ; for the people began to tire of fish, which as yet necessarily constituted our chief animal food.

During a period of some weeks, the respective parties pursued with little variation the employments heretofore stated ; my Eliza and myself, the while, using our intellectual faculties, to the best of our judgment, for the advancement of the general good and our own comfort. Sometimes we visited our former haunts ; and being now furnished with excellent boots, there was little inconvenience in our walking among the sand to the cocoa-nut grove, which was the only spot left where we could sit as formerly, quite by ourselves, with our dear little dog at our feet, and repose our spirits without the

chance of intrusion. Sometimes while there I took off my coat, and climbed a tree with the gaskets, and brought down a few fresh cocoa-nuts to regale my sweet companion: sometimes we ate one of the melons, which grew in abundance round us; and on going away, she would collect some capsicums in a little basket, and say, "These will do for our dinner-table to-morrow, Edward." Now and then we conversed on what we had been reading, whether religious, history, or only amusing story. And not unfrequently we talked over the scenes of our first days in this Bethel of the desert; and then, perhaps, turning our eyes to where Captain Drake and his party were at work, anticipated the day in which we should see some of our dearest friends inhabit that pleasant spot. We seemed afraid to cast a glance on the subject of our wealth; but it happened one day, that my Eliza asked me how much a year the money which had been placed in the funds would produce?—"About 2000*l.* a year, my love," I replied. — "Then, my honoured husband," said she, "surely you will never again send a hundred poor turtles to the butcher, to save 200*l.* or 300*l.*!" The rebuke was just: few but herself would have made such a use of the information she had required; and I took shame to myself on the instant she so expressed herself, — promising I never would repeat such an act again.

Friday, September 5th. — Allwood reported the three houses finished on Edward's Island; and Diego stated many articles of the harvest ready for getting in. I told Allwood, as soon as the crop was taken up, the allotments of land round the three

houses should be marked out; but that, meanwhile, he and his son must immediately join the building party at Peccary Field, to earn some money to pay for his supplies; and this was readily acceded to and gladly acted on. Diego required no additional hands at the harvest; taking time by the forelock; and as he cleared the grounds of it at Edward's Island, he housed it in one of the new buildings. Early in October the whole produce of all our plantations was got in and housed; that from the opposite island being brought over. The plantation storehouse and little shed being filled, a considerable quantity was carried to the great storehouse of the cave. In this gathering, to my great surprise, there were three flour barrels filled with pressed tobaccó leaves of excellent quality. There had been no want, certainly, of that article heretofore; but, till now, it had not been well cured, and therefore, although our Spaniards were not bad cigar makers, I never could use our own manufacture with any degree of pleasure. And for the same reason, a few of my Havanna cigars, given to the men, had always been considered as a treat; Diego usually saying that his cigars were only "Cabána," alluding to their cottage manufacture.

Tuesday, October 14th.—It was now the time to fulfil my engagements to Allwood's family; and to this end I sent for the three men, and told them the wood and other materials that had been used in building the houses, I should consider as a set-off against their labour in erecting them, for an occupation of seven years; that four acres of cleared ground were to be attached to each habitation, for

which they should pay a dollar yearly per acre as rent during that term, but nothing for the houses; and that, if they behaved well, the lease should be from time to time renewed on such terms as at the time might be just and reasonable; and that this, and all other rents, were intended under present circumstances to form a public fund for any future occasion that might arise for the benefit of the colony. There were no objections started to these proposals; therefore writings were delivered to each of the men to this purport. "And now," said I, "let your wives come to the storehouse, and furnish themselves with kettles and earthenware, knives and forks, and every other thing requisite to make your homes comfortable: as to tables and chairs, and such like, you can make those yourselves, at your leisure, and I will provide you with mahogany for the purpose. When you have taken your families to live on Edward's Island, you shall draw rations weekly, which will be charged to you. But I will make you a present of one of the small canoes among you, or rather to the township; and at my expense, Diego and his lads shall set up your hurdle enclosures. So that you, Mr. Allwood, and your son, may continue to work at Peccary Field." These propositions were well received, and the women lost no time in making their demands upon the storehouse in consequence; but, like some other people who have an account with a tradesman, their orders were rather large: however, I desired they should have whatever they required; and accordingly they fitted up their three houses very comfortably. Within a few days I paid a visit to

the new hamlet, and without any difficulty subdivided the twelve acres into three equal allotments; the shape of the cleared ground having been so well adapted for division. When I had marked the corners, I left Diego with his train to set about the work of enclosure, which in the end proved tedious, as there was much difficulty in finding small wood for the purpose, without cutting down some large trees; most of the branches of those which had been felled on clearing the place, having been cut up, and carried to the neighbourhood of our residence to be piled for fuel: however, by Saturday, the 25th of October, he had completed his task, and all was in due order at Allwood's Plantations; for so we now called it.

The house at Peccary Field, having been three months in hand, was beginning to make a respectable appearance; therefore I thought Manus Allwood might be spared from the work a while, to make the necessary furniture for himself and friends; and I told him so, lest he and they might feel sore at the delay I had already occasioned. Two of Diego's patriarchs were added to the strength of the building party, and the other two left with the Don, to keep our place in order. Purdy was also allowed to give his whole time at home for a while to make fish-pots, and to assist the women in various other domestic provisions and arrangements necessary to the future comfort of people newly settled. Having the canoe, he could provide them with fish; and I gave him a cask, to sink as a conservatory for any superabundance he might occasionally take.

My Eliza now sent for the wives of old Allwood, and Manus, and Purdy, and gave to each of them six young hens and a cock, and as many ducks apiece; also to each a young she goat, and one male amongst the whole party. She told them these were her presents, and that all she requested in return was, for the women to take all our Guinea fowls with them, in charge for us; rearing new broods, and providing us with eggs, and galenas for the table, when required; adding, that she had arranged it with me that I should give them a weekly allowance of corn for all their poultry, free of any cost to them, until their own harvest came round. The women expressed much gratitude; making many professions of the warmest attachment. Their kind friend then said at parting—“Remember, nothing but sickness must ever prevent your attendance here on the sabbath! And on that day a dinner will be provided for you after divine service.” They took their leave, loaded with their poultry, and dragging their goats along with them, well satisfied with my gracious Eliza, and her kind and useful present. On the same evening, their husbands came to thank her also; so they were all made happy, but she the happiest of the party. — “Mercy is twice blessed!” says our inspired Shakspeare; and I say — so is every act of kindness: — “It blesses him that gives, and him that takes;” but most the giver.

CHAP. IV.

SUNDAY, October 26th. — We were much pleased with the improved devotion of all our people this day; and afterwards, with the great progress many of them had made, in reading words of one and two syllables, in sentences conveying sense and meaning.

Monday, 27th. — It had been my orders for some time back, for a regular look out every day at sun-rise, from the flag-staff; and Martin being in the way, whose regular business it was, he reported a brig in the offing. In consequence I detained Captain Drake, who went with me to the height; and, with the glass, we discovered a union jack flying at the fore-top-gallant mast-head of the brig. I despatched Martin with the information to my wife, desiring him at the same time to tell her not to be alarmed, as we intended to fire the gun, when we hoisted our colours. Martin was also directed to get the Avon ready to go out of harbour, by the time Captain Drake should come down from the height. The shot was then drawn from the gun, and the match lighted; and having given Martin plenty of time to deliver his message, the piece was fired, and the colours hoisted; which was answered from the brig, by the union jack being hauled down and the ensign hoisted at the main. From this moment I had no doubt of its being Captain Taylor, returned to us in our own ark, and perhaps bringing with him some of our family. I hastened to

apprise the dear partner of all my cares and joys of my anticipations. A thousand fond ideas flashed across her mind, the moment I spoke; and in her transport she threw herself on my breast, saying, "Oh, my dear Edward! if ——" then pausing, added — "but just as it may please God! I will not venture to say more. He is our gracious God, and kind Father, and I rest confidently on his goodness: be it as he will!"

The Avon was quickly under weigh, having Captain Drake on board with the schooner's crew. As soon as she made sail, I despatched Allwood and Manus in the small boat, to tell their wives what the business was, and to bring them back with them if they pleased; but that I did not intend to give any merry making until after the vessel's departure, considering that the presence of the strange sailors on such occasions might lead to some unpleasant irregularities.

When the boats were fairly off, my dear wife and myself climbed the promontory; and by the time we had placed ourselves under the colours, we saw the Avon go alongside of the brig, as she lay to, with the main topsail aback. They both quickly made sail, the Avon leading, and soon we had the pleasure to see them approach near to the promontory, when I perceived a female on deck. On this discovery we hastened down to receive them, with our hearts full of tender wishes, notwithstanding higher feelings of resignation. But nature will speak, if it be but in a whisper. And as we watched the vessels coming round the point, that whisper was loud enough to be felt, if not heard; the heart

beat high and irregularly, and we could not prevent it. I put the glass to my eye, and now saw distinctly my brother, and my Eliza's sister, Amelia, on the quarter-deck of the brig, looking towards us. — "They are indeed there, my best beloved!" I exclaimed, "your sister Amelia and my brother!" — "Blessed be God!" she said, and sunk into my arms. The struggle within her had been great, to repress these emotions; but now that they had burst the bounds of restraint, she was overcome. In a little she sighed deeply, then by degrees raised up her head and smiled, looking earnestly towards the vessel. The schooner's best boat had been manned with Diego and Xavier, and the Allwoods, who had just returned with the women from the opposite shore; so that the moment the brig dropped anchor, we stepped in, and rowed alongside. My dear Eliza, with the agility of a kid, sprung up on deck, and I quickly followed her. We each flew into the arms of the children of our fathers. Blessed moment! blest by Him we adore! and blest by many an eye that saw it!

I was glad to see Captain Taylor again, and shook him heartily by the hand; then embarking in the boat for the shore with our brother and sister, who had become doubly so by their intermarriage; I requested Captain Taylor to join us at dinner, at the same time taking him aside, I told him my restrictions respecting his crew; but added, that fish and vegetables should immediately be sent off for their refreshment. Our people waited to greet our coming friends, upon the beach, with every testimony of respectful attachment; but our domestics

alone followed us to the mansion. Here we welcomed our dear guests with a new embrace; my beloved wife saying, "This is indeed a happy day to us."—"And to us also, my dear Eliza," replied her sister.

They now expressed their surprise at every thing around them, — the stupendous hill, the placid and extensive lake, the beautiful shores that seemed to surround it on every side, and the little settlement opposite, did not escape their observation. — "And is it here you were wrecked, brother?" said James. — "Yes," I replied; "here; we will point out the exact spot to you, by and by."—"But this island is not the uncivilised, half desolate place, in which we expected to find you," returned he. — "No," replied my Eliza; "our God has made the wilderness to blossom as the rose! and when we were thrown on this coast, Edward and I, and Fidele here, were all our company."—"O Fidele!" cried Amelia, the little creature at last attracting her attention, "come here." The fond animal, on being spoke to, raised its fore feet on her knee, and seemed to devour her hand with caresses. — "You know me then, Fidele?" continued she. On which the kind little creature redoubled its fondness, as much as to say, "I do indeed remember you." The ladies now soon retired to the bedchamber, and I requested my brother to walk down with me to the beach. We met Diego by the way. "Hark you," said I, "lodge the four lads in the plank-house, and remove all the stores out of our storeroom into the house on the north; and have a good lock fitted to it, and some shelves instantly

put up there, for the reception of the things that may require them." Diego bowed more elegantly than usual, but without speaking a word, and retired to execute the orders I had given him. — "Is that a negro?" said my brother; "I should say he is a very well bred man." — "How can it be otherwise, brother," I replied, smiling; "is not he at court? He is my minister for the home department." This sally made James smile in return; but he evidently did not know whether to consider me in jest or earnest.

That there might not be any confusion in carrying the things through the hall, out of the storeroom during dinner, they were all removed without loss of time, and the floor of the vacated room washed out. At the appointed hour, we had the pleasure to see the two skippers walk into the hall; and our brother and sister, well dressed, quickly after make their appearance; so that dinner had not to wait for the guests, nor the guests for the dinner, — a point of some importance to all parties; for without this observance, either the dinner is spoiled by waiting for the guests, or the appetite of the guests taken away by waiting for the dinner. During the repast, Mrs. Rota had many commendations for her excellent fare, and still more exquisite cookery; but our dear relations, as they sat at table, were more delighted with the fine view through the open doors, than with all the cunning of Dame Rota's cookery. After dinner we had the best dessert our island could afford; our first pine apple was cut for the occasion; Diego had brought in some ripe bananas from the wild plants near the spring, to

which was added a fine musk melon, cut in the dell since we sat down to dinner. With such a display, and a bottle of Canary, I was enabled to entertain our friends nobly. The captains, with becoming delicacy, left us at an early hour, to smoke their cigars on board. After they were gone, our second bedstead was put into the room that had been prepared for it, and three or four chairs, with a small table; and the second chest of drawers, with all other requisites, as far as our means would go, were got in, and arranged for the comfort and accommodation of the welcome accession to our family. Being alone, we now talked over family affairs, and read the letters they had brought with them from Awbury, which afforded a heartfelt pleasure to us both. After the letters had been perused, and many a kind word had passed from the lips of my Eliza, in affectionate acknowledgment of what her much revered father had written to her and to myself, we entered generally on the subject of family affairs, in the course of which her sister took occasion to say, — “So you perceive that we were determined to lose no time in joining you; for as no one would have me, and no body would have James, — is it not so, James?” continued she, “we cut the matter short, and followed your example.” — “You little monkey!” cried her husband, “you know I had long pined to make myself happy with you, but only wanted those means which our kind brother here so unexpectedly afforded us.” — “All is well,” rejoined my Eliza; “and that same brother will do every thing in his power to make you both comfortable here, now

that you have confided yourselves to his friendship." On her saying this, I took my brother's hand, which was the best speech I could make on the occasion. Our conversation next turned on my uncle, whose letter by them I had not yet read, but which I begged leave now to open. I read it to myself, and smiled: — "This is a very different letter from the last, my dear Ediza," said I, putting it in my pocket. "And there is a little postscript in it, from our good old aunt, telling me the Virginian nightingale is well; and if I have any other pretty thing to send her, Captain Taylor will take charge of it. You may, perhaps, think of something for her, dearest," continued I. All matters uppermost being now nearly exhausted, we took coffee, and soon after retired to rest.

Tuesday, 28th. — Captain Taylor waited on me early in the morning, telling me, he wished to proceed to the Bay of Honduras without loss of time, as my cousin would be expecting his arrival with anxiety; and, therefore, forthwith he would land the supplies which had been shipped for me by my uncle's orders. I told him to do so; and that I certainly would take what my uncle had sent out by him on my account, although I had not ordered any thing of my uncle; and there were many things in the inventory useless to us, and many others we did not want. Among the former were blankets and candle moulds; among the latter, large quantities of bottled beer and cheese. However, there was much welcome matter in the provision way, and otherwise. In short, such an

assortment as would be ordered by a person keeping a general store in any of the West India islands.

The amount of the invoice was 480*l.* : but my uncle had not counted without his host ; he had learned from Captain Taylor that I had brought an iron chest well filled with money from Jamaica, although he could not devise how I came by it ; neither could the captain furnish him with any information beyond surmises. The story of our attack on the *Guarda Costa's* boat, having been magnified so as to throw a wonderful light on the subject, my uncle, in his letter says, (in that familiar phraseology, which he sometimes chose to use in writing as well as in speaking,) — “ Eh, Ned ! 'tis well thee didst not lose either life or limb in the attack on the *Galleon* ; how much did come to thy share ? — 'Tis a secret, may be : thee must have got a pretty penny ; did hear thou hast a large iron chest full, besides the schooner thou bought, and what didst send to Awbury : well, thou art a good-hearted fellow, Ned ; and now thy brother and his wife wish to join thee, I will let Taylor take them out for 20*l.* a head in his way to the Bay ; as he tells me he can pop in on you, without going much out of his way ; and I take upon me to send thee out an investment by him, of which thee mayest take much, or little, or all : but the goods are shipped purposely for thee ; and thou mayest make good profit on them, if thou knowest how ; but if thou wilt not take them, I may be loser. The amount, to be sure, is large, but if not convenient to pay ready money (for which will allow five

per cent. discount), thee shall have credit for twelve months, till Taylor makes his next voyage." My uncle enclosed in his letter a counter-statement to mine, respecting the disbursements for the brig, and the prices of the things I had taken out of her while she lay a wreck; contriving to make the balance considerably more in his own favour than I had done; however, I resolved to let it pass, without objection or comment, and pay agreeable to his own statement. After breakfast Captain Drake employed himself in taking an inventory of the things landed, and in superintending their removal to the great storehouse. Meanwhile I was engaged in settling accounts with Captain Taylor; in doing which I took my uncle at his word, deducting five per cent. from the amount of the invoice; a subtraction, in truth, it could well bear. This being done, I gave Captain Taylor a set of bills on Messrs. Perry and Co. of London, for the amount of the invoice, and balance of the other accounts, for which I took his receipts.

Our dear friends from Awbury had not burdened themselves with many matters beyond their wardrobe, so that all their movables were soon conveyed into our mansion. During my counting-house occupations, my wife and her sister, with James also, were busily employed in writing long letters to England, in which I interrupted Eliza, saying — "Go, dear, and put up a piece of the silver tissue for my aunt, and tell her it came from China, which I believe it did, some how or other! and write her a few lines with my love." I then sat down and wrote my own letters to England;

which were rather short, but I hope to the purpose. I next dashed off a very brief but civil one to my cousin at George's Key; while my Eliza, by my desire, ordered a certain number of ducks and fowls, and melons, to be put on board the brig as a present for him, together with some yams for the crew. When all these proceedings were completed, it was too late for the brig to go out of harbour that day, seeing she had at least five leagues to run, before she could be considered in the fair way beyond the shoals and reefs.

After work, the brig's crew were regaled again to-day with fresh fish and vegetables; and in the evening were allowed to go ashore on the isthmus, to amuse themselves by walking any where, except crossing the streamlet to the southward. We found there was some difficulty in getting this order obeyed; which led me to the determination, on some future day, to make a strong palisadoe (with a gate in it), from the sea to the face of the promontory, for the purpose of fencing in my own residence. We did not dine till three o'clock to-day, every one being closely employed to enable Captain Taylor to sail in the morning.

During dinner, at which Drake was present, Taylor often expressed his great pleasure in the progress every day produced in the comforts of our little colony. His observation, I confess, delighted me not a little. But he added — "I don't see how you are to get any trade here." — "Oh!" I replied, with a grave air, "we can board a galleon now and then; that will do." — James and he glanced at each other. — "My dear brother," said

Eliza, "you look like Gil Blas, when he saw Captain Rolando! Do you really think my husband is a pirate? — he is only playing off a joke at your uncle's expense; who says in his letter, that *he hopes Edward had a good share of the galleon he boarded!* Now that impression must have arisen from something you told him, Captain Taylor," added she, addressing Taylor, "about capturing the Guarda Costa's boat, with the two Bermudians; and that is the galleon floating in his brain." James and his wife now laughed, and Captain Taylor began to explain; but we soon perceived, by his confused apology, that he had said rather more to my uncle than had been quite correct: however, it was of no great importance, and we passed it all over as a matter of pleasantry.

It was dark when the coffee was served this evening, so that the glass shades were placed over the candles. Amelia admired them very much. "So elegant," she said, "in their appearance, and so useful in completely protecting the flame from the current of air!" which, indeed, was pretty fresh sometimes, as we permitted it to perflate our dwelling by night as well as by day. She did not, however, seem as pleased with my cigar; and she openly expressed her dislike, when James discovered an inclination to join me. — "Amelia," said my dear wife, "we must lodge you in the plank-house, for a few evenings, where we were; and you will soon be glad to get enveloped in this delicious smoke, to protect you from the tormenting bites of myriads of sand flies." — "Very well," she replied, "when the sand-flies bite, he may smoke! But,

at no time I can ever like it. Gentlemen never smoke in England till they are half a hundred years old, and then they use a handsome pipe, which certainly in an old gentleman's hand looks something respectable ; like a justice of the peace ! but as to these cigars, they remind me of dirty boys, trying to smoke a piece of stick." — Eliza and I looked at each other, and smiled. At this moment our captains came in, who had left us soon after dinner ; and they joined me in the fumation, to the great amusement of my dear wife, who wished to see her sister smoked out of her prejudices, as she had avowed they could not be overcome in any other way.

In the evening after we retired, my Eliza told me that her sister had taken a clandestine peep into the iron chest, during the minute or two it was left open, when she was bringing the tissue to me. My dear wife owned herself vexed at the spirit of the action, and therefore had gently chided her : telling her she was welcome to look into any of her sister's drawers, but never to again attempt to pry into any thing that more especially belonged to her husband, " whose desk, or other lock-up places," I told her, " even myself did not presume to look into, without his permission. I was sorry," added my gentle love, " to be obliged to say so much to my sister ; but I had met an attempt on her part to sift the secret of your wealth, at an earlier hour this morning ; and I determined instantly to crush the spirit at once in her, on discovering her peeping into the iron chest." — " I, too, am sorry for this, dearest," returned I ; " for doubts between

relatives are ugly things." — "O never mind, we shall be as good friends as ever," she replied; "and now the ground is made sure."

Wednesday, 29th. — Captain Taylor took his leave as soon as the sea-breeze freshened; and the Avon got under weigh with him, to see him clear of the shoals, by the same passage he had entered the harbour. After breakfast, James and I went out together to visit the several houses on the plantation, and to show him other parts of my little domain. He was delighted with the finely-shaded walk through the woodland region, and with the gush of water that burst from the cliff. I showed him our wooden palace, and described to him how I built it with my own hands. I then took him to the inlet, where the kind providence of God had placed the brig, after delivering us from the reefs and rocks, the situation of which I also pointed out to him. I then took him into the recess where once the thicket stood, and showed him our extensive storehouse, and the spacious cavern within it, which much excited his astonishment. He said the place, taken altogether, the depth of the recess, the perpendicular of the rock, its vast altitude, the completeness and fulness of the storehouse, and the extent and wonderful appearance of the cave, with the light coming in through the rock behind, filled his mind with something like the idea of an enchanted cavern. "Now, James," said I, "you must take charge of all these things, and keep books of them regularly, as I have done; and I will allow you a hundred a year for doing it; and as soon as circumstances may permit, you shall com-

mence trading as a merchant, and all the money you can make shall be your own. I will give you a house, and lands, and servants ; and I will enable you to start fair, unincumbered, and in the possession of every requisite for success." — " My dear brother," he replied, " I will be guided entirely by you ; and, under that guidance, act precisely as you may point out, and I hope I shall not be ungrateful for your kindness."

The Avon returned about half past twelve o'clock, and after the people had dined, we proceeded in her to Peccary Field, where the carpenters were at work. " That is a capital looking house," observed James, as we drew near the little bay. — " I hope, my dear brother," I replied, " it will be a commodious one. It is in the best situation on George's Island, and it is intended for you." — " Indeed ! " he said : " but why not for yourself ? " — " O, no," was my reply ; " we should always treat our friends better than ourselves." Lion met us on the beach : I had given orders that he should be of the party, to keep the peccaries at a distance, and ultimately, if possible, to drive them altogether from the place. We were quite delighted with the approach to the building, and more so with the fine view from it, embracing a great part of the lake, the promontory, and our settlement ; also the opposite coast of Edward's Island, with Allwood's plantation. " This is, indeed," exclaimed James, " a charming spot." The house was now quite up, and the carpenters in the act of putting on the shingles ; so that, externally, it had all the appearance of being complete. " In a couple of months," said I, " you will be able

to inhabit it, if you please. But I advise you to remain with us till the latter end of February; by which time I shall be able to fit up the interior, and to furnish you with a suitable establishment." After perambulating the adjacent shore and grounds, we returned, bringing Drake along with us to dinner. James was full of what he had seen; so that, the moment he entered the hall, he began to tell his wife of the wonders he had encountered beyond the woodlands, and of the fine house I had built for them at Peccary Field; and during dinner he continued to talk of nothing but what he had seen; so that our sister was quite agog to go over the ground again with him, which I promised she should do to-morrow.

Thursday, 30th. — Captain Drake was desired to send off the Avon, with the men and their requisites, to the creek; and to attend on my brother and his wife with the schooner's large boat, and row them to Peccary Field. My dear Eliza took care to put up a basket with refreshments, and a bottle of wine for the party; not forgetting a few cigars, by way of a little innocent mischief. Now Drake was fond of a cigar, like the Spaniards, at all hours; and we well knew he would not miss the treat, whenever he saw one near him; and, strange to say, when he did turn to, to regale himself in this manner, Amelia began to find a cigar not quite so abominable a thing as she had declared it to be. On their return, our sister seemed quite delighted with the day's excursion; and while describing to us the pleasant spot at the head of the creek, where they had spread forth the contents of the basket under

the ample shade of a fine tamarind tree, she added, "After enjoying our cold meat, and wine, with water from the little stream that ran at our feet, I confess I really found the smoke of Captain Drake's cigar by no means disagreeable." This confession drew forth a smile from Eliza. But all the party as well as the lady were pleased with the day's amusement, and enjoyed the fumes of the cigar. Our sister, however, cherished one gratifying recollection beyond either of her companions; which was, the superior appearance of the house and ground destined for her abode.

During the absence of the party, my dear Eliza and myself had felt quite happy in being again alone; and we could not help saying to each other that, when we reflected on the bliss we enjoyed when no other human being was on the island but ourselves, and on the inexpressible relief we found in the temporary absence of even our dearest friends, that we must draw the conclusion that the happiness of those who truly love each other, cannot be improved by any other mortal intercourse — God and ourselves, being to ourselves all in all. "But man was made for society, dearest," rejoined I; "and it is, therefore, our duty to sacrifice even our happiness to our usefulness." — "And it is, this reflection, my honoured husband," she replied, "that reconciles me to all the stir and bustle we have brought upon ourselves; certainly, at the expense of our own immediate enjoyment."

Friday, 31st. — Martin reported a sail in the offing just after sunrise. Captain Drake immediately ascended the promontory; and having hoisted the

colours, sent down Martin to tell me it was a Spanish unarmed schooner. My good friend soon after followed his messenger. "I think she wants to come in," said he to me: "she is lying to. — "Very well," returned I: "go out to her with the Avon; but arm the boat's crew, for fear of a trap, and take Xavier to interpret." He did all I directed; and in half an hour sailed out of the harbour. Diego sounded the bugle, and Manus and Purdy instantly came over in the canoe. I then took some of the men with me to the height, to be ready with a shot, if there should be any hostile intention. But I soon perceived all was right, seeing the Spaniard follow in the wake of the Avon. However, as this fellow would carry some report of us somewhere, I thought it prudent to put on my commandant's uniform; and give a musket and accoutrements to Allwood and his son (who had both been militiamen at Jamaica), and post them as sentinels; one at the landing-place near the Black Rock, and the other to walk to and fro on the open ground before the mansion. When the Spaniard came to an anchor, I sent my brother in the four-oared boat, to bring the captain on shore. When he made his appearance I received him with all the importance and gravity of a Spanish Hidalgo; which did not fail to make the desired impression. Diego was standing behind my chair; but my Eliza and her sister were in one of the bedrooms. — "Where did you come from?" — "From Santa Martha." — "Where are you bound?" — "To the Havanna." — "What do you want here?" — "I have sprung a leak; and, seeing the land, stood

in as far as I could for the breakers ; and hoisted my colours, in hope of relief." — "Do you know where you are ?" — "I am not sure," he replied ; "I believe these islands are called the Serranhas ; but no one ever thinks of coming near them if he can help it, on account of the shoals and reefs." — "This is St. George's Island ; in the dominion of the king of England," replied I : "you will know it again, I hope, when you see it ! Your schooner shall be repaired with all possible despatch. — What is your cargo ?" — "Cacao, Xinchona, Vanilla, dyewoods, wax, and some dollars."

I now sent for Drake, and desired him to take the Porghee alongside of the Spaniard, and assist him to unload with all speed, and, while his schooner was heaving down, to give the Spanish captain share of his cabin ; but to lodge the crew in the Avon ; and not to allow any of them to stray into the settlement. I bade him make sentinels of the Bermudians and New Englanders, four hours and four about, at the Black Rock ; and to set the four carpenters at work on the vessel's bottom, as soon as she was hove down. This was quite enough for Drake : he was master of my hints in a moment, and put them in execution. But he moreover suggested to me the policy of firing a morning, and evening gun, while the Spaniard was here ; to which I instantly acceded. Accordingly, at sunset he fired the gun, and hauled down the colours ; and again in the morning, when they were hoisted : and this he continued punctually to do while the foreign schooner remained.

Saturday, 1st November. — They had got out great

part of the cargo into the Porghee ; and as we did not know what to do with the Spaniards on Sunday, I, on mature deliberation, determined, that as they were birds of passage, and could not join in our devotions, to leave them to themselves to do as they pleased ; which was to continue at the work of getting out their cargo.

Sunday, 2d.—The bell rang for prayers at ten o'clock ; and all the settlement were soon present, excepting Captain Drake and the sentinel on guard. Every one came dressed in their best ; and our brother and sister were much impressed by the scene they witnessed. I believe it raised us higher in their esteem than all our wealth. The teaching, however, was this day dispensed with ; having desired Diego to make the people walk by twos and threes on the isthmus ; and to row to different places backwards and forwards all day in the boats, and in the canoes, both men and women ; so as to impress our visitors with a belief that we were more numerous than in reality we were. The settlement at Allwood's Plantation made a respectable appearance ; and the empty house at Peccary Field looked very grand ; so that by this stratagem, and the firing of the gun, I hoped to obviate any despicable opinion the stranger might otherwise conceive of the English colony in these islands.

Monday, 3d.—By middle day, the Spaniard had got out all his cargo, and was brought alongside of the Black Rock ; and there soon hove keel out. She had started a plank, and it is only to be wondered that she did not founder ; for it was loosened fore and aft. Formidable as this accident

really was, it could be repaired in a day: I therefore, putting on my ordinary dress, went with my brother in a boat to the rock; and, calling Xavier, told him to tell the Spanish captain to walk up to the store, and see if there were any things he would wish to buy, or to take in barter, for some of his cargo. All our people knew the policy of my conduct towards the Spaniard, and therefore concealed from him my being the same person he saw in the commandant's uniform: and having now put aside my wig, as well as my laced suit, I might well personate some other individual. The Captain readily accompanied us to the storehouse, where Diego and two of his patriarchs were apparently employed. Xavier then returned to his work; and I desired Diego to show the Captain the hams, and cheese, and some of the hardware and crockery. He asked the price of the various articles, of which we informed him, having the invoices with the prices in our hands; but laying on the usual Jamaica advance, of 50 per cent., exclusive of the difference of currency. He seemed very well satisfied with the prices; and picked out several cheeses, and a quantity of checks, and linens, and hardware, and crockeryware, for which he paid in dollars to the amount of 700; and said, he would call at the island, on his return from the Havanna, and take some of the other articles, as well as more of those he had already selected, as he could find a good market for them at Santa Martha. I desired him to enumerate the things he would most want, that I might ensure a supply for him; and asked him when we might expect him again. He replied

"In about two months and a half." I then desired him to bring me twenty boxes of cigars.

A new plank was put into the schooner, and caulked, and the seams payed over, before Tuesday night. So that on Wednesday he re-embarked his own cargo from the Porghee, and also took in that he had purchased from us from the store; making room in his vessel, by leaving out some of the dyewoods, which I bought of him for a mere trifle.

I charged him only 40 dollars for repairing the schooner, which he paid with great satisfaction; and on Thursday, the Avon accompanied him clear off the reefs, through the same channel by which he had entered. On the return of the Avon, I assembled the people, to praise their good and judicious conduct during the stay of the schooner; and I then distributed the 40 dollars among them, not forgetting my six young bondmen; but to each of the carpenters, including my poor slave Allan Derrick, I gave 5 dollars. "Tank you, Massa," said he; "you treat me same as free man." "Yes, Derrick," I replied, "no one shall feel here that he is not free, unless he is bad; and all who are not free, who continue good for seven years in my service, I will then give to them their freedom." "Tank you, Massa," cried the poor negro, clapping his hands; and all around joined in the acclamation.

I brought the bag of dollars I had received from the Spaniard into my own room, on my return to the house with James, after distributing the amount paid for repairing the schooner among the people.

"Now," said I to my brother, "let us make an entry of this transaction in the books." And while we were so employed in the hall, our wives joined us. I then left James writing; and brought the bag of dollars out of our room, and placed it on the table. "Here, brother," resumed I, "calculate the freight and insurance on the goods we have sold; add to that the invoice prices; and see what profit arises." "The invoice prices," said he, "amount to 111*l.* sterling, and the freight, &c., say to 9*l.*, making 120*l.* sterling, which is 504 dollars. "Well, then, James," returned I, counting out 196 dollars from the bag; "there is the profit for you, and thus I will deal with you as long as we are brothers." He was overpowered by my generosity, and Amelia also; who said—"It is no wonder, Edward, you are so rich, if money comes in like this!" The sight of so many dollars was a novelty to her; and while she was turning over the splendid coin, her sister brought her out an empty bag from our coffers, to put them in. Poor souls! they were quite overjoyed at this commencement of their good fortune: we, although not thus exhilarated, joined in their pleasurable feelings; and being relieved from the care which the presence of the Spaniard had occasioned, sat down in high spirits to our excellent dinner. But we did not feast alone: an ample repast was provided on this occasion for the people under the cotton tree, where they regaled themselves with unusual festivity.

Captain Drake dined with us; and we laughed heartily over a good bowl of punch, at our grand

display of a flag, a cannon, a fine coat, a wig, and a sentinel, to our Spanish visitors.

We did not sit long over our glass ; my brother and Drake and the ladies making a visit to the joyous group at the head of the glade ; leaving me at home, by my own request, to meditate on a measure which the visit of the Spaniard had induced me to consider. I was not long in determining on the expediency of immediately doing what my mind had suggested for consideration. Having come to the determination, I quickly conceived the details of the business ; so that when the party returned, I told Captain Drake I found it expedient to send him to Jamaica. " Therefore," said I, " get the schooner ready for sea to-morrow ; take out the bricks, and ballast her with limestone from the rocks of the promontory ; then take in the dyewoods, and your orders shall be ready for you, and you shall sail on Saturday morning." — " It shall be done, sir," he replied ; and before the people dispersed, he went out to them, and informed them of his intended speedy departure. But they had no money at present to send for commissions, nor did they require any thing. It was necessary, however, that the sailor men should know of the intention, that they might be ready accordingly. This measure was not taken on account of goods wanted for the Spaniard ; our store was yet well supplied ; but I wanted more strength, and some things for my brother's house. I therefore chose to embrace the interval of the Spaniard's absence, to have this voyage made, which, at any rate must otherwise have soon been undertaken. When my soul's part-

ner and I retired to our own room, I explained to her the objects I had in view by sending off the *Perighee* so suddenly. We consulted together on the subject during the greater part of the night; discovering every now and then something more that would be desirable for Drake to accomplish when at Kingston. And having at last satisfied our minds with a full contemplation of the matter, we offered up our prayers at the throne of grace; and then, endeavouring to dismiss all wordly care, resigned ourselves to the welcome influence of sleep.

Friday, 7th. — We were all busily employed this morning, in writing to England; my wife, and her sister, to our friends; I transcribing duplicates of letters, with bills, given to Captain Taylor for my uncle, together with an order for goods by the *Mary* next year. I wrote also to Perry and Co., and to Mr. Green at Kingston. These done, I made out Captain Drake's orders, desiring him to procure two sawyers and one bricklayer, all free people, if he could procure them. I did not care whether they were whites, blacks, or mulattoes, with or without families. But if he could not procure free people, he was to purchase slave workmen; single men, if he could get them; but if not, to take husbands, wives, and children, at a fair price. Also, to buy seven young negromen, and four young females newly arrived from Guinea; and to take in bricks, planks, boards, one hundred bushels of maize, bales of negro clothing, bales of checks and stripes, boxes of linen, boxes of large coloured handkerchiefs for the head, bales of leather, two grindstones, packages of hoes and bill-hooks, bags of nails, &c., agree-

able to memoranda of items, and one chest of tea; also household furniture, as per memorandum; and to bring with him a fast rowing six-oared boat; also twenty stand of arms more, with accoutrements; and to procure fifty suits of soldiers' clothing, if possible.

By the evening, the schooner was ready for sea; and the wages of Martin and Purdy, and the two New Englanders, Ned Hall and Ben Hackett, were now paid up to the day. On receiving their money, Martin and Purdy expressed a desire to take their wives to Kingston; and Hall and Hackett asked me if I would give them houses and a piece of ground, if they could bring wives with them from Jamaica. I granted both these requests, of which I informed Captain Drake, when I put my papers into his hand; telling him, at the same time, to be very careful on his return, to preserve propriety in the schooner; and to give the women the steerage entirely to themselves, with directions to the wives of the men going out, to take special charge of the brides and negro girls. My dear wife hearing this, sent for Mira, Martin's wife, into our bedroom, and there gave her some useful advice, following it up by a present of ten dollars.

Saturday, 8th. — Early in the morning Captain Drake came to take leave, when I counted him down 225 doubloons, equal to 3500 dollars, which is about 860% sterling; but desired him, with a smile, to bring back as many of the gold pieces as he could; that sum being, indeed, quite sufficient to cover the whole order, supposing he should be obliged to purchase all the articles wanted. He

got under weigh about nine o'clock, and passed through the northern channel, with a fine breeze, at E. by N., carrying the good wishes of the settlement in his wake for him and his crew; who were now not only our fellow-settlers, but our fellow-worshippers, and bound up with us in one interest, and in one faith, serving each other in love.

Three carpenters were still kept on at Peccary Field house, to finish the interior, in doing which they required no extra assistance. Manus continued at Allwood's Plantation, making furniture; and Diego and his four men being now at leisure, had set about completing the painting of the great storehouse, roof and sides, and all the houses on our plantation, excepting the mansion. One of the two poultry girls was added to the washerwomen, in lieu of Mira; a single "henwife" (as my father used to call such a person in his farm) being found quite enough for the business, since its management had become better understood. Still there was plenty to do, notwithstanding the late abstraction of poultry for Allwood's Plantation; for the young broods of geese, turkeys, ducks and fowls were numerous, and the whole flock, taken together, quite a swarm. Besides, the pigs had multiplied from four to twenty-four, and the goats, after sending away four to Allwood's settlement, still numbered ten. It is true that Diego's men looked after the pigs; which now had a commodious sty, boarded off for them in the S.E. corner of the great stockade, never being allowed to range about but when Abel, or some other of the patriarchs, could be spared to run at their heels.

Sunday, 9th. — We enjoyed our assembling together on the Sabbath in happy quietness ; no hurry of spirits, no distraction of thought : and our school, after prayers, was strictly attended to ; in which duty our brother and sister cheerfully lent their aid, and I was happy to see their zeal in the business.

Monday, 10th. — Our men having their several occupations assigned them, at which they were to continue till finished, I took this opportunity of making my brother master of the books, and of the principles on which they were kept, with respect to the people. Even Diego's department, and that of the stock, were represented by figures.

We now found leisure to enjoy ourselves with our dear friends in personal recreations. Sometimes we walked abroad in the cool of the morning on the beach, collecting shells ; or, when the sun was high, reposed under the shade of one of our numerous fine trees, and there read books of amusement, — *Gil Blas*, or the *Arabian Nights' Entertainments*, or *Swift's Gulliver*. But my dear *Eliza's* favourite was the *Paradise Lost* of *Milton*, which, with a few other choice books, her father had sent to her by *Amelia*. From this sublime work she would sometimes read a fine passage to us, and always with great pathos ; for her soul was in the subject, and she therefore did the author justice. I will not, however, dissemble, that my evening cigar, a gratification not quite so elevated, in which now my brother heartily joined, afforded great pleasure both to ourselves and to our wives, as one or other read out to us by the shades on the table, during that

ceremony. Thus we passed our time, observing faithfully the Sabbath, as it came round.

Monday, 1st December. — The carpenters reported the house at Peccary Field completed; we therefore visited it in the Avon on the same day, and were highly pleased with it altogether: its commodious size, the beauty of the situation, and the excellent workmanship and materials that built it. I bestowed much praise on Mr. Allwood and his coadjutors; and requested they would endeavour to knock up two small houses near this new mansion, for its domestics; and to do it before the schooner's return. I proposed them to be sixteen feet by fourteen each. Allwood did not hesitate to promise that they would set about the job immediately; and as Diego had finished the painting, two of his men were to be sent to their assistance: Diego himself, with the others of his party, being retained to grind corn, procure fish, and do other things required in his victualling department. Besides, poor old fellow, he was now our look-out at the flag-staff.

There was, however, a business hanging over us to be done, in which my dear wife took a lively interest. The pigeons must be shut out from their ancient domain, the cave; for we found they soiled the packages stowed there. My Eliza deeply regretted the necessity of this measure; and stipulated, for these ancient possessors of the place, that they should receive at our hands the best indemnity in our power. After many consultations, it was at length determined to construct a large pigeon-house on the sides of the gallery of their entrance;

which was to be closed at the hither end by lattice-work, so as to admit light and air into the cave; and as this lattice-work frame was to be placed in the interior of the opening, the passage to which through the rock might be six or eight feet, we hoped a sufficiently commodious habitation would thus be afforded to the poor ousted natives of the cavern. But as time must pass before it could be completed, it was also resolved that the pigeons should be allowed quiet possession of their former home till the new one was ready for them. We, therefore, meanwhile, directed the stores to be removed from the sides of the cave, where, only, they were liable to be smeared. But this reminds me to notice that the pigeons which Captain Drake brought from Jamaica, above three months ago, had taken kindly to a tea-box we had stuck up at the end of the fowl-house in the stoccardo; but that our two little wild pets had not associated with them, but left us when their wing-feathers were allowed to grow, no doubt to join their old friends.

Early in December, we became anxious for the arrival of the schooner; but as the weather continued fine, I attributed her delay to Drake's difficulty in executing some of the commissions without a great sacrifice of money. Manus having now finished the furniture for the three houses at Allwood's Plantation, joined the other carpenters at Peccary Field; and by Thursday the 18th, the two outhouses were completed. But the schooner had not arrived, and our anxiety gradually increased. In this state of suspense, I prevailed on my dear wife to consent to my going in the Avon to the

extreme part of the northern channel, that I might look out beyond the reefs, from some accessible part of the high land on that part of the island. I took the carpenters in the boat, which they managed very well, having been accustomed for some time back to sail to and fro with her from the Black Rock to Peccary Creek. I landed with Manus, the most active of the party, opposite to the outermost little low island, on a fine open spot of rich ground, and with great difficulty gained the summit of a height, after an hour's laborious climbing; from whence we saw all the reefs on that side, which I examined carefully with my glass, but could not discover any sail in sight. We, therefore, descended; and, re-embarking, landed two or three times on this part of the main island, which I perceived to be well suited for settlements, if our increase of population should at any time require them.

On the morning of the 19th, we received the unexpected intelligence that Xavier's wife, Hachinta, had brought forth a male child in the night. We could scarcely believe Rota, who gave the information; for we did not even suspect Hachinta's pregnancy, she having continued her work as usual. My dear wife and her sister lost no time in visiting the little stranger, administering every thing necessary to the mother; and on their return they set about making baby-clothes, with which, I afterwards understood, the mother would gladly have dispensed, having wrapped the child up in a large coloured cotton handkerchief, which she thought quite sufficient and less troublesome; but as the infant must be dressed after the English fashion, our

two ladies soon carried it into effect, though to the great discomfort of both mother and child. But he was our firstborn ! and there was, of course, a great fuss about him ; and to honour him as much as possible, his name must be *George*, after our good king. "Very well," said I, "be it so : and if he take his father's name as a patronymic, it will sound altogether nobly, *George Xavier !*" But, alas ! the peculiar pronunciation of the Spaniards was not favourable to the name of this *august infant* ; for both father and mother, and Diego too, when speaking of him by his name, called him "*Gorgy Shaver*," or "*Corky Shaver*," which, in a great measure, destroyed the sublimity of my intention.

Notwithstanding the interest this new event excited in the mind of my dear wife, she could not help observing my anxiety respecting the Porghee, and took every opportunity of consoling me, and setting my mind at rest ; first, by showing the probability of unexpected delay in accomplishing my orders ; and next, by directing my intellectual eye to the providence of that God who had hitherto made us his especial care. During Saturday, I gave too much occasion for her kind solaces ; and on Sunday, during divine service, we ventured to offer up a prayer for their safety.

CHAP. V.

MONDAY, 22d December.—I was preparing to go out again in the Avon, when a schooner was discovered from the flag-staff by Diego, and reported as standing in for the promontory; but he had not been able to make her out, being as yet too far distant in the offing. I lost no time in ascending the height; and instantly, to my great joy, recognised our anxiously expected vessel. She had now approached near enough to allow me to see distinctly with the glass every body and every thing upon deck; and the sight a good deal confounded me. "Diego!" said I, "Captain Drake has brought all Kingston with him, I believe; take the glass; and see what a crowd is there; what am I to do with all those people!" Diego took the spyglass in his hand; but I did not wait his reply, hurrying myself away to tell my dear wife the news, and to prepare for the reception of my friend Drake, and his numerous companions. When I arrived, Diego was close at my heels; and, having acquainted my Eliza and our friends that Drake was now coming round his own promontory, we all hastened to the front of the open ground close above the rocks, to await the arrival of the schooner: she was not long in making her appearance; and in a few minutes after, passed us, and then came to an anchor. We were all filled with

wonder at seeing her deck so full of people; but the more so by observing that many of them, men, women, and children, were *whites*. However, as soon as the anchor was down, Drake came on shore: I welcomed him heartily, as one found that had been lost, exclaiming almost at the same instant—"But who, all, have you got there?" "I don't know," returned he, "whether I have done right or wrong; but I have brought four families I saw in distress at Kingston. The men had belonged to the temporary corps that was raised, you may remember, for putting down the Maroons; but being found useless, it was disbanded. Such as chose, were sent back to America, whence they came; but these four families, being foolishly advised, remained in Jamaica; and gradually found themselves in no better condition than the free negroes, which is bad enough." "Go, and tell them," said I, "they shall be well received; but where to lodge them, Drake, I really do not know. Who else have you got?"—"Every one," he replied, "you desired me to obtain."—"You have done well!" returned I. "Go and tell them, also, they shall be kindly treated; but for a little time they must put up with great inconveniences. And let them land forthwith."

In about half an hour, the soldiers and their families were conducted to the mansion, and brought into the hall. I received them courteously; and my dear wife, who never could bear to see even an insect in suffering, spoke kindly to the women. The men were beyond the prime of life, and looked the worse for wear; the wives were slat-

terns; and the children looked sickly. The youngsters were nine, altogether; and the eldest of them a boy about twelve years old: there were four boys and five girls, the youngest of which was in its mother's arms. I told Diego to show them under the cotton-tree, whose ample shade would make a comfortable temporary retreat, and to desire Rota to give them some solid refreshment.

"James," said I to my brother, after they were gone, "there is nothing for it, I perceive, but to convert your house into a barrack, till we can turn ourselves round, for these people."—"It is yours, brother," he replied; "do with it as you please; but if it were not, you should be quite welcome to it for the purpose wanted."

The black strangers were next brought on shore, and introduced in rotation. The sawyers had been purchased at 400 dollars each; a great price, but they were fine fellows, and unincumbered. I spoke civilly to them, and desired Captain Drake to request Allwood to take them with him in the evening, for the present, to his plantation. The brick-layer came next; a mulatto free man, named Hart, with a wife and two young children, male and female. I told him I would fulfil every agreement made by Captain Drake; but for a little time, he and his family must put up with such lodgings as we could give them, until a place could be fixed on for their residence. I then desired him to get his things on shore, directing Diego to lodge his family in the plank-house; on which he observed, he was in my hands, and must rely on me altogether for dealing fair by him. "You may not

doubt it," said my dear Eliza; "all who behave well, will be more than fairly dealt with here; but I should leave the people to tell you this: I will say, however," continued she, taking one of the children by the hand, and looking kindly on it, "if you love yourselves, we will love you, and show you all kindness." The new negroes were now mustered; and well looking young people they were, decently clad in Osnaburgh; seven men, and four girls. "I do not know what to do with all these," muttered I to myself; then pausing a moment, concluded to send the men to occupy the out-houses at Peccary Field. That my embarrassment might be more complete, the two New Englanders had brought wives with them, who were presented to us in their turn. "Dame Rota," said I, "what are we to do with these?"—"Let them be with Derrick and his wife, if it please massa," she replied, courtesying. "We would take them ourselves," continued she, "but Mira is come back, and she and Martin are again with us; and La Señora, I know, would not send them to trouble Hachinta and her little child."—"But then," I rejoined, "Derrick and his wife must take their husbands also."—"But they not married yet," rejoined Rota, looking with no inconsiderable importance, as she made the reply. "You are quite right, Duenna," I exclaimed; "we will see about that on Sunday; and you may now tell them so."

There was so much bustle in the settlement, by the arrival of all these people, that we found no time even to sit down to dinner. Captain Drake handed me my letters, and gave me an outline of

his voyage and expenditures, while snatching a morsel; but we were too much engrossed in considering and in doing what was now required of us, to enter on details. He merely told me he had sold the dye-woods well, but that the proceeds and all the doubloons excepting ten had been expended; and these he now gave me. "Finish your sangaree, my good fellow," said I; "and take the soldiers and their families, and whatever they may have brought with them, to Peccary Field House, in the Avon; take the seven new negro men also, and put the New Englanders into the boat to work her; it may be as well for the present to keep them out of the way. Lodge the soldiers in the four bedrooms, and put the negro men into the out-houses, where they will be sufficiently well accommodated. And I should wish, moreover, that you would take your cot with you to sling in one of the saloons, so as to keep an eye on the strangers until we know them better. Desire Diego," continued I, "to furnish you with provisions for their subsistence, and whatever else you think you may require to take with you." Drake made no other reply, than, "Very well, sir;" quickly after moving off, to carry the order into execution.

Purdy and his wife returned home with their friends, the Allwoods in the evening, taking the two sawyers with them. And now the two black sailor boys only were left in charge of the *Porghee*. At night a shakedown was made in the hall of the mansion for the four new negro girls, who, with the other three, Martha, Mary, and Anna, lay down quietly, and well satisfied, to sleep on the floor.

Thus I had found quarters for every one, consistently with the relative condition of all concerned. It may be thought such circumstances too light a matter, to be worth all the troublesome arrangements it forced upon me to observe; but in all such things the fruit is worth the labour — a certain harvest of amity and peace.

Tuesday, 23d. — Early in the morning I took my dear wife and Diego, with my brother and sister, into council on the subject of providing permanent accommodations for the people, but most immediately for our young negresses. We all seemed puzzled. The rainy season was approaching; ground was to be cleared of timber, ready for the husbandmen; and there was no time for building. After a considerable pause, my sable minister at last spoke as follows: — “If it so please my good master, I will go back from big small house to my own house, after Hall and Hackett take away their wives; and then Derrick go to live again with Shavier. Martin and Mira stay with us, will be four — and will only be four and child at Shavier’s; then, you master, sir, can give big small house to somebody; black girls can be made to lodge there, if it please my good master.” — “Thank you, honest Diego,” I replied; “you are always ready to put yourself to any inconvenience for the accommodation of others; but I cannot give that house to the negro wenches, since you are so good as to leave it at my disposal.” — “Take house there on other side, good master, sir,” he replied; “cave large, sir; great storehouse large, sir; plenty of room there, sir. Can empty plantation storehouse,

and make place for all the young women in it, sir. Maybe, La Señora and the hermana Donna will put some little things that they and Rota may want, in their own rooms here, sir." — "A very good proposal, Diego," said I; "so let all the bulky stores be removed from the plantation storehouse this very morning: its shelves, however, may be still occupied by jars and the fruits; but as soon as the ground floor is cleared, send Xavier and Derrick to fit it up for the girls to sleep in." To this arrangement the ladies made no objection; but, on the contrary, commended Diego for his sagacity.

Captain Drake came now over from Peccary Field, with two of the soldiers. One of these men (James Craig, a Scotsman) had been a corporal in the corps to which he formerly belonged. My zealous friend thought it his duty to offer Craig to my notice as a well-behaved, sober-minded man: on which I called him to me, and told him he should have charge of the barrack, as long as the people were to remain in it, and that all provisions and other things for their use would be placed under his care; that I should look to him for a regular account of all disbursements; and that he would be furnished with pens, ink, paper, and a book for the purpose. The corporal touched his hat, and I was well pleased thus to rid my friend Drake of a troublesome office. It was not long before the soldiers returned to their quarters with the necessary supplies, in our large canoe, rowed by the two New Englanders.

Having got rid of these people, Drake and I paid Diego a visit, who, with his men, were busy removing the stores round by water to the black

rock; and having also taken a look at my brother James and his party, making stowage for the roots and some other such articles, by placing boards on beef barrels in the cave; I told Drake to send the fruits, brought from Kingston in the schooner, on shore; and then move her into Peccary Creek, that she might be in a place of safety in the event of bad weather, until we could find time to unload her. I added, he might sleep on board, if he liked, which would, perhaps, be more comfortable to him; and still he would be on the spot to superintend the clearing and laying out of the ground for planting, which must now be set about with all expedition. "And," said I, "you shall have the two sawyers, who are capital woodmen, and the seven new negroes, under your command; and you must employ the soldiers, to assist also in the best way they can." Allwood, who stood by, was now directed to take Diego's four men, as soon as the work in hand was done, and with these, and his son, to clear the land of trees to the southward of their allotments, within the lines formerly marked out by Captain Drake; to be ready for the spade and the hoe after the expected rains.

My dear wife had, as usual, not been idle this morning. All things required from the plantation storehouse, that could not remain there, and could be placed on the shelves of my brother's bedroom, our original storehouse, were brought to the house; and among other matters, she took care that the sable damsels were all well washed with soap and water in the stream, where the trees of the woodland region conceals it from view: and after this

operation, at which Rota superintended, they were neatly dressed in striped linen, with coloured handkerchiefs on the head, tied *à la Française en bandeau*; and when this was done, she appointed to each their respective occupations, placing them more immediately under the direction and control of their governante, good old Rota.

Wednesday, 24th. — The schooner had been moved over to the creek in the afternoon: and this morning, Martin and Purdy, with Hall and Hackett, the two New Englanders, were sent in the *Aton* to the eastern islands, to procure a supply of turtle; while Drake and his party at Peccary Field, and Allwood with his party at Edward's Island, were hard at work felling trees, to make clear the grounds for our approaching field labour. Being now a little at leisure, I sent for Hart the bricklayer, and came at once to an understanding with him about wages and so forth; telling him, a regular account should be opened for him, so that whatever conveniences he wanted for his family, he might now have from the store on credit. Having thus disposed of him, and the great body of the people being well employed, I found my mind somewhat at rest.

My brother, however, still had full occupation at the storehouse, with Derrick and Xavier for assistants, in making good stowage of the things; so as to be all conveniently at hand, without incurring confusion and delay, when any particular article might be wanted. But it now became absolutely necessary to exclude the wild pigeons from the cave, and I felt myself called upon to perform the *terms* my

Eliza had stipulated for on their behalf; and to this end, Hart and Xavier were instructed to fit up the gallery which communicates with the cavern from without, for their retreat; and then place a lattice-work partition across the inner opening; so that while we gave them the best accommodation in our power, I took care that both light and air should still find their way through this extraordinary passage.

Thursday, 25th. — We could not make this day a holiday, our numbers were so increased, and the stormy season so near; therefore I told the people how it was, adding, that I hoped, next year, we should be able to honour the day as we ought. I visited the working parties at noon, and took a hamper of beer in the boat, with which I regaled the men; leaving some bottles for another drink to each, after the labour of the day. With this treat they were well satisfied; and having plenty of provisions, the business went on with alacrity and method. I returned to dinner, but it was not a *Christmas* feast; yet I was glad to sit down, and recreate myself with the conversation of those I loved.

In the evening, my Eliza and her sister named the new negro girls, Delia, Phebe, Clara, and Hebe, who in due time were to be baptized.

Friday, 26th. — The Avon returned with fourteen turtle, ten of which were immediately put into the craal; she was then sent with two to Allwood's, and two to Peccary Field, being directed to bring back a load of fire-wood; but Purdy was left at Allwood's, to fish for the party; and on the return of the boat, Martin and the New Englanders were

set to work on two more fish-pots for the settlement; and in the evening, they made a great take of mullet by torchlight, and replenished the conservatory.

Saturday, 27th. — My dear wife, with her sister and myself, paid a visit to Peccary Field, for the express purpose of taking some comforts to the soldiers' families, which she had got ready; namely, coffee, sugar, butter, flour, and some soap; besides a piece of striped and checked linen, with all the requisites of tape, thread, needles, &c., to make up their clothes. The women were much gratified at seeing her, but more so when the presents appeared; but I left her with them, and visited Drake and his party, who were getting on apace. After my Eliza had finished her kind donations to the wives and children of the soldiers, (during which she gave them salutary admonitions about cleanliness, and their expected attendance on Sundays at divine worship), we then embarked, and returned home much pleased by our expedition.

Sunday, 28th. — At ten o'clock, the whole settlement assembled at divine worship; which was conducted with as much order and solemnity as possible, considering the motley group that formed our congregation. After prayers, Xavier's infant was baptized; and then I proceeded to marry Ned Hall and Ben Hackett, the two New England blacks, to their respective betrothed spouses, who had accompanied them from Kingston. There was no school teaching to-day, the ceremonies mentioned having made it late. Besides, in consequence of our great numbers, I thought it best to send the

soldiers and their families back to Peccary Field; and also Allwood's families to their homes, immediately after service; the bridegrooms with their brides being put in temporary possession of the vacant house at our plantation.

Monday, 29th. — This morning, I desired Hart the bricklayer to construct a limekiln on the isthmus, to the north-west of the plank-house. There were plenty of bricks on the ground. The coals had been landed close to the black rock, and the whole promontory was mountain limestone, so that his work was altogether quite at hand; and hammers being provided to break the limestone small, I told him I should expect great expedition in turning out a kiln of burnt lime. The ground-clearing woodcutters continued assiduously at their work, and I added what strength I could to each party; sending the two New Englanders, with their wives, to Peccary Field; and desiring Martin, as well as Purdy, to assist at Allwood's. Hart having finished all a mason could do towards fitting up the gallery in the rock for the wild pigeons, Derrick joined in the carpenter's work, which now quickly would be finished. It was a part of my arrangement at this time to employ the two black sailor boys in rowing a despatch canoe from one place to another, as there might be occasion.*

* If the Editor had taken the liberty of abridging any parts of the original journal, it would have been in one or two such passages as the above; where the changes of occupations and residences of the different individuals are so circumstantially, and somewhat tediously, detailed. But they belong so truly to the style of the narrative altogether, that, without making an awkward rent in it, nothing of them can be omitted. — E.

Early in the week, Allwood reported the twelve acres cleared of wood, and ready for the planter; having removed all the trunks of the trees to the side of the bay, where those cut on a former occasion now lay. The smaller wood, fit for hurdles and faggots, had also been put together; and he brought over with him the timber carriage, to send to Peccary Field for the transportation of their felled trees, to a proper place for sawing them afterwards into planks. By the end of the week Drake had finished his task also, so that now nearly all hands were set at liberty.

Our zealous and useful friend was now able to give us a little of his company, which was a pleasure to us, and a recreation to him after his late labour. He thanked him for the complete way in which he had seen the work performed, and the taste and judgment he had exercised in leaving a fine tree standing here and there on the cleared ground, which altogether might amount to fourteen acres.

I took the opportunity which our present leisure afforded, to send for the soldiers. I told them it was my intention to lodge Corporal Craig in a vacant house on my own plantation, in consideration of his being their non-commissioned officer; but I would give the others each a house, with some land, at the northern extremity of the isthmus; and that no time should be lost in the business, provided each and every one of them continued to act with the same propriety they hitherto had done; and I requested Drake to go the next morning early, and take any persons with him he might choose, to mark out six lots, of four acres each, in a lot

line between the high black rock east of Peccary Field, and the little rivulet.

This little rivulet was the same my dear Eliza and myself had seen, when we feared we might again encounter the rocks, after having been delivered from the perils of the reef.

My dear helpmate had not been unmindful of the bricklayer's family, since they landed at our settlement. She had supplied them with many comforts; and took the trouble to admonish the woman on points of order and cleanliness, and directed Mira to spare an hour in the day to teach the children to read. Martin now again became our lookout and our fisherman, and attended my brother occasionally at the store; and thus we proceeded, observing the Sabbath as it came round.

1736. — Tuesday, January 6th. — The wind was very unsettled all day; I therefore gave orders for all work to be suspended, and sent such supplies as might be required for a week or two to the distant settlements. Captain Drake was requested to return to Peccary Creek immediately. The sails of the schooner were unbent, and the topmasts, and yards, and gaffs got down, and all made snug. The Avon and the six-oared boat were secured there, within the schooner, and all the other boats and canoes were hauled up before night upon the beach of the isthmus; and a kiln of quicklime, that had been turned out in the morning, was covered over with planks slantingly, so as to protect it from the heavy rains, which might now every minute be expected.

The event of the night bore testimony to our foresight and precautions; for it blew and rained.

tremendously, chiefly from the northward, threatening every moment to blow in our door and window-shutters, and at times increasing with such violence as to make us fear it would carry away the house. We had not forgotten to pray, although of late I have said little about it; but on this night, our brother and sister, and ourselves, were not one minute in our beds, but together in the hall, comforting each other, and imploring the protection of that God whose hand can bridle the fury of the wind, and preserve his people. The noise of the storm was great; the howling of the wind, the pelting of the rain, the uproar of the waters, beating up against the rocks not two hundred yards below the house; and now and then we heard the bleating of the goats, and the mixed noises of the frightened poultry. Our settlement was the only one completely exposed to the violence of the tempest: which reflection, on thinking of the others, afforded us some consolation.

As the sun rose, the gale abated, but the rain continued to fall in torrents. The wind came now only in squalls, but these squalls were bad enough. This dreadful weather continued, with scarcely any intermission, for five days; clearing up suddenly and permanently on Monday at sunrise.

Monday, 12th. — Notwithstanding our care of the lime, the rains had got to it; and some of the planks were nearly consumed by taking fire: but as the heat extricated itself below, the rain kept down the inflammability of the wood, and little further damage ensued. We found the beach covered with sea-weed, and broken reeds, and

shells. The turtle craal was knocked in pieces; and the staves scattered in every direction. Our sub. conservatory was also thrown on the strand. The sugar-canes were broken off short above the roots, or knocked down; and the pine-apple plants much injured. The canoes and boats drawn up upon the beach, had been moved from their places, but had not received much damage. All the buildings stood secure; but the stockado of the poultry-yard was blown down, and part of it carried to a considerable distance, and some of the poultry killed. Early in the day we were visited by Captain Drake, who reported all well at Peccary Field; and we had the pleasure to receive the same tidings from Edward's Island.

Tuesday, 13th.—Mr. Allwood with his son, and Xavier, and the two sawyers, were now despatched to commence work at the northern extremity of the isthmus, with directions to get up three houses as soon as possible on the plan of those on Edward's Island: and the three soldiers and the two sailor boys, John and Harry, were directed to assist in transporting materials to the spot, and in any other way in which they could render assistance; and as soon as Derrick could repair the damage done by the storm to the stockado and turtle craal, I promised to add him to their party.

Diego now took the field with all his strength—his own four patriarchs, and the seven negro men; to which the two New Englanders were added; commencing operations at my brother's plantation. In a few days they did their business here, plant-

ing the fourteen acres that had been cleared. He then took the whole force to Allwood's Bay, where Percy joined him; and with this strong party he finished his work there by the 28th. Plantain suckers from our own plantation had been put in both at Peccary Field and at Allwood's Bay. Cuttings of our broken sugar-canes, and cassava cuttings also, were planted. But the bulk of the grounds was occupied by yams and coconos, maize and Guinea-corn, and tobacco. What may be called garden ground, was sown with Indian kale, calaloo, oca, pumpkin and melon seeds; and in a choice spot, offsets from our pines in the dell, formed an infant pinery. When Diego had finished his labours, I visited the two settlements; and could not but express myself highly pleased with the masterly manner in which the grounds had been cultivated, and the alacrity with which all hands must have worked to accomplish so much in so short a time.

During this time, Martin, with the women, had planted our grounds in the dell. The pumpkin and melon beds between the spring and black rock, after being enriched with the soil from the cave, were put in order, and duly sown by Hart and his wife.

The grand agricultural operations being finished, we had now time to attend to minor matters. Four of the fruit trees (that came from Jamaica in tubs) were removed to Peccary Field; where, the hoops being knocked off, the trees, with all the earth about their roots, were taken out of the tubs and planted; and in the same manner, the other four

seeds were put into the ground, as near to our own mansion as the nature of the soil would admit. But being desirous of doing still more in the propagation of fruits, two of Diego's patriarchs were sent off, day after day, in a small canoe, with seeds of the shaddock, orange, limes, and peppers, to plant in the best situations they could find all along both coasts of the two islands. On taking a survey of our vegetable stores, after planting the thirty-six acres of ground, besides our own little plantation, we found very few yams and cocos remaining; and from the great consumption of corn by the poultry, the maize also was brought to a low ebb; so that it was well we had a hundred bushels of that grain in the schooner.

There was now leisure to unload the *Perchee*, so, after taking out the furniture for my brother's house, and a grindstone at Peccary Field, she was moved over from the creek to the black rock, below the promontory, and the cargo landed. Our storehouse and cave were again pretty well filled; and notwithstanding the paucity of our yams and cocos, we had every thing else in abundance. By Saturday, nothing remained in the schooner but the bricks, which we were not in a hurry to land, as there were a great many already on shore, and those on board would serve for the present as ballast; and by way of a finish to the day's work, the second grindstone was set up close by the duck-hatch, near the spring.

The following sabbath was observed with due reverence, as I hope every former one had been, since our landing on the island; and the Sunday

teaching was conducted this day upon an enlarged scale.

Monday, 26th. — The buildings at Soldiers' Town were proceeding rapidly: and there being now three kilns of lime turned out, the bricklayer was ordered to mix a quantity of mortar, and, with the assistance I should give him, see that stones and bricks, and other materials, were carried to the rear of the stoccado well back towards the hill, to build there an ample stone and brick kitchen for our settlement.

We were now looking out rather expectingly for the Spanish schooner on her return to Santa Martha, the time being expired at which he promised us a visit. And having judged it expedient to make a display of our little force on this occasion, should he come, to prevent any report to our disadvantage which might afterwards draw on us some adventurous Picaron or other Marrover; with this object in view, I sent for Corporal Craig and his three comrades, and told them my ideas on the peculiarity of our situation, signifying my intention of devoting every Saturday to military exercise; to which end, they must accustom the men about us, as soon as possible, to fire with blank cartridges, and afterwards to try them with ball at a target placed on the isthmus. But, in the mean time, I wished Craig and his three comrades to fit on a suit of clothing each, and tally them with their names; so that in the event of the sudden arrival of the schooner, or any other strange vessel, the men could repair to head-quarters, and dress in an instant, ready to be placed as sentinels. They were

quite delighted with this information; it renewed in their minds the recollections of proud days gone by, without the annoyances and abject circumstances that attended them. The clothing-chest was opened, and having their choice, they managed a tolerable good fit; looking well with their broad-flapped red coats and cocked hats, quite like brave musqueteers as they were: but when they put on their broad belts, and shouldered arms, I felt a glow within me I cannot describe. I hoped some day to see all my people appear thus. I now desired Craig to remove with his family to my residence, and take possession of the vacant house I had reserved for him near our own; which I only delayed giving him until I had assured myself, by observing his conduct, that he was worthy of the confidence I desired to place in him.

On Saturday morning, we had a grand muster in the shade, to the north of the promontory; in all, thirty-four, including ourselves and Drake. The arms were brought to the ground, and the men were put in training. We kept them at it till noon, when dinner was served to the whole party on the field; after which they recommenced the drill, and at five o'clock returned to their respective habitations.

Sunday, February 1st. — Our new associates began to show something like devotion at prayers, which afforded us much satisfaction. I endeavoured on this occasion, in a few plain words, to impress on them their dependence on Almighty God, not only for their preservation in this life, but for a participation in the life to come; also the duties he

required of us, both as to himself, and to each other, and to all men of every country and colour. And I took the opportunity of stating to them, that, although some of them were my slaves, bought with my money, I should treat them as the white indented servants in Jamaica were treated; that is, after a service of seven years, every man and woman should be free: and it was my determination that such should be the law of the island: agreeable to which, every resident on it should sign a paper to that effect; and that every child born on the island, of slave parents, should be considered as free from the moment of its birth, excepting that, in compensation for the support the master gave to such children in their childhood, they should be bound to serve him until the completion of their twentieth year. All this was explained particularly to the new negroes; on which the whole assembly poured forth a joyous acclamation.

Monday, 2d. — Mr. Allwood reported the three houses finished at Soldiers' Town. In consequence, I desired him now to set about the building of three similar dwellings at Edward's Island — one on each of the four-acre lots lately cleared and cultivated; to observe his front line accurately, and not to encroach upon the intersecting road as marked out by Captain Drake. In reply, he requested me to give him a few days to attend to some private affairs, and he would then set about the erection of the houses required; but hoped that I would render him every assistance he might desire; which I duly promised, and as duly performed. During the

week, some of our people were employed in procuring turtle ; some in transporting the small wood lately cut at Peccary Field, to our own settlement, and there building it into stacks for firewood.

On Saturday we had another day of drill ; and on Sunday the sabbath was kept with due solemnity.

During the two following weeks nothing remarkable occurred ; but I gave Mr. Allwood so much assistance, that the buildings on Edward's Island seemed to rise as if by magic. Diego the while, with his men, enclosing the land around them with hurdles made from the loppings of the trees lately felled there, in clearing the grounds.

Tuesday, 24th. — Martin reported a Spanish schooner off. We answered his signal by hoisting our colours, with a gun ; on which the bugle was sounded, and all the men hastened, by boats and canoes, to head-quarters. Captain Drake went out in the Avon, to pilot the stranger into port. In the mean time the soldiers were dressed in their regimentals, and a sentinel planted at the pass between the black rock and promontory, and another before the mansion. The other people were variously disposed, some in boats, others set to carry bricks, but all moving about, so as to be seen from the sea. And as the Spaniard anchored, the Allwoods and their party were made to return by boats to their settlement ; having shown themselves, which was all that was required.

The captain of the schooner landed, escorted by Drake to the mansion. I had dressed for the occasion ; and was sitting in state, with Corporal Craig,

in regimentals, standing on one side, and Diego on the other. The Spaniard said he had again come from Santa Martha, but on purpose to trade with us; that he had missed the islands, in his return from the Havanna; adding, that he had been so well treated the last time he was here, that the report he had made of it, he was sure, would occasion some other Spanish vessels to visit the place. I assured him of my protection, and hoped he would have no reason to complain of any treatment he might receive at the island; and I hoped I should not have any complaint of any of his people, all of whom must be on board every evening at gun-fire. He bowed, and took his leave of me; but went to the storehouse, accompanied by Diego, where my brother awaited him.

They proceeded immediately to business, at which my presence was not at all required. Fifty per cent. on the invoice was the ratio of sale, so that James could tell him the price of every article in an instant; and as he fixed on things, they were turned out. He took nearly all our refined sugar; two boxes of linen; several boxes of stripes and checks, and coloured handkerchiefs; some bales of negro clothing; and, to our surprise, most of the blankets, and all the candle moulds, which he said were for the Cordilleras, or mountainous country, to the westward of Santa Martha. He took also a quantity of our hoes and bill-hooks, some barrels of salt beef and pork, a few hampers of cheese; a large quantity of copper, both in pigs and sheets; some brass and tin, also in pigs; almost all the crockery we could spare, and several chests of iron-

mongery and nails. The articles fixed on amounted to 570*l.* sterling by invoice; to which 50 per cent. being added, to cover freight, insurance, and profit, gave 855*l.* sterling, which is 1197*l.* Jamaica currency, viz. 3591 dollars. We took from him in return, dyewoods to the amount of 300 dollars; two tons of bees' wax, 296 dollars; one hundred bags of cacao, at 16 dollars each, 1600 dollars; and twenty boxes of cigars, 160 dollars; amounting in all to 2356 dollars. By Thursday evening, the one cargo was out, and the other shipped; and the necessary papers being exchanged, he paid the difference in hard dollars, amounting to 1235.

On Friday, Captain Drake disembarked the bricks, and took in the goods purchased of the Spaniard; with which he sailed on Saturday for Kingston, taking with him 2000 dollars in addition, to purchase an assortment of merchandise, such as the Spaniards were most likely to require. And I desired him to bring, for our own use, a certain quantity of American flour and Irish provisions, and maize, together with as many yams as he conveniently could stow away.

On Saturday, while the men were at drill, I adjusted the books with brother James, and, agreeable to my promise, paid him over the profits of the sale just made, which amounted to 987 dollars, after deducting ten per cent. for freight and insurance; and to these I added 30 dollars that had been cleared on the dyewoods, sent the last trip to Kingston.

I now told my dear brother, that from this day forward I would have nothing more to do with the

trade. He was to charge himself with the amount of the whole stock on hand, and also with what should arrive either from Jamaica or England. However, he was to keep my island account for supplies, but it was to be totally distinct; and I added, that I would lend him more capital at any time he required it, only desiring to be reimbursed when his circumstances would allow him to do it without inconvenience. He received my determination and assurances with many expressions of gratitude; and the sum he had just received was, he said, a handsome earnest of his future fortune.

The three privates, with their families, having removed some time ago to their own quarters at the farther extremity of the isthmus; and my brother's house at Peccary Field, having undergone a thorough scouring, two beds were now put up in two of the bedrooms, and all the furniture unpacked and arranged ready for the reception of the family: and as Hart had finished our stone kitchen, and was quite at leisure, he with some assistants were despatched to build one at my brother's mansion, of similar materials.

Thursday, the 11th of March, James took possession of his house and grounds at Peccary Field; having one of his back rooms fitted up as a store chamber, well filled with all requisite supplies. On their leaving us, my dear wife and myself appointed the following persons to reside at his plantation: Xavier, with his wife and child; David and Jacob, two of Diego's agriculturists; Mary, one of the young women about my wife; besides two of the new negro girls, and also one new negro man; to-

gether with a good stock of every kind of poultry, and two she goats with kid.

The buildings at Edward's Island being finished, I sent the wives of the two New England blacks to occupy one house, destined for themselves and their husbands; and the two sawyers, and four of the new negro men, were to take up their abode provisionally in the others — they being bondmen, and the former about to be employed in sawing the felled trees into boards. There now only remained with us Diego and Rota; Martin (when at home) and his wife Mira; Derrick, the carpenter bondman, and his wife; two new negro men, and two of Diego's patriarchs; Anna and Martha, my wife's maids; with two other negro girls, and the corporal's family.

I had the old plantation warehouse fitted up again for a store; and my kind wife gave directions for the chamber our brother had slept in, and which had been a storeroom originally, to be furnished with two beds, and every thing necessary for her maids and the other girls, agreeable to the manner of civilised life. After these arrangements, drill-day came; and when the men had fired half a dozen rounds of blank cartridge, the orders for the operations of the ensuing week were issued, liable to interruption only from casualties; and this was adopted as a rule of procedure in the colony.

In the evening, when the people and our brother had returned to their respective homes, my dearest Eliza and myself felt once more to live and breathe in freedom; being again alone, and quiet: and, as we congratulated each other, our dear little dog seemed to participate in our feelings by every de-

monstration of gaiety and fondness. "You have now put the machine together, my dear Edward," said she, "and have set it going; and I do think the arrangements you have made with our brother may be calculated on to continue it, without harassing yourself almost to death, as you of late have done." — "Indeed, love," I replied, "I hope things now will go on pretty smoothly, without much trouble, but with great pleasure to ourselves and to the people; and I bless God for making me the instrument of so much good." She leaned over me, as I smoked my cigar, while thus we talked; which imparted to me a happiness all my wealth could not have purchased.

Sunday, 14th. — After prayers, the four patriarchs were baptized by their respective names; also Anna, Mary, and Martha, and the children of Hart; but we did not consider the seven young negro men, and four young negro women, who arrived last amongst us, sufficiently advanced in Christian knowledge to entitle them to the rite of baptism. Our school, too, was duly attended to; but, from the great increase of persons requiring tuition, little could be effected with each individual: however, as our only object was to enable them to read the Scriptures, we hoped in time to accomplish it.

Monday, 15th. — I convened the people, and in their presence placed one of the new negro men with Allwood, and one with Manus Allwood, and one with Xavier, and one with Derrick (although himself a slave), and one with Hart the bricklayer; to be with them for four years, to learn their re-

spective trades: and it was stipulated that, after they had served the four years with their masters, they should be considered as my servants again until their seven years of bondage was completed; when they should have a house and grounds allotted to them, and they would then live and work for their own profit.

Xavier and Derrick, having roofed in the kitchens built by the bricklayer, went next, with their apprentices, to make a formidable stoccado barrier of wood, with a strong gate, from rock to rock, across the entrance that leads to the great storehouse at the cave. There was nearly wood enough in the old palisadoes, which had been placed there in a loose and hurried manner on a former memorable occasion, so that the job could not be either long or tedious. Between this barrier and storehouse there was a fine intermediate area, that might at some future time be occupied advantageously. But, in the mean while, it was intended to place a doghouse here for Lion; so that if, by accident, among our increasing population, any dishonest person should arrive, he would feel little inclination to make his way clandestinely to our stores. Diego was sent off to-day, with his two remaining patriarchs, and one of the new negro men, to Soldiers' Town, to assist in making hurdles to enclose their lands; and he was desired, after showing what was to be done, to leave his men at the place until the enclosures were completed. As there were not any trees on the ground, although the soil was good, nothing further at present was required to be done in preparing it for the hoe and

the spade, to be in readiness for the falling of the rains.

I now found time to put a favourite plan of my intelligent helpmate into effect ; which was, to construct an underground conduit of brick from the great fountain, through the woodland region to the grounds below the cotton-tree ; there to empty itself into a reservoir covered from the sun ; from thence to overflow, and irrigate the planted grounds in the dell between it and the lake. The brick-layer and his apprentice were forthwith set about this work.

The two sawyers were now directed to form a sawpit on the south side of the grounds at All-wood's, where all the trunks of the felled trees had been carried ; and make it their daily occupation to saw them all into boards, many of them being timber of the first quality.

Corporal Craig took the look-out at the flag-staff permanently, and charge of the gun ; and the regimentals and arms for his three men were lodged in his house. In fine, he became my day-orderly for government arrangements, while Diego attended for domestic concerns ; and therefore, as I said when I introduced him to my brother James, he was my minister for the home department ; and an honest and faithful minister he proved.

My dear wife and myself made frequent visits to Peccary Field, to see our brother and sister ; for they were so much occupied with the improvement of the place, that they could not conveniently leave it : and as Xavier was now borrowed from them for a time, I promised them an equivalent in Derrick as

soon as the stoccadoes should be finished, although the one before the storehouse was equally important to James as to myself. But I was desirous in all things to observe every appearance of equity between man and man, and to show my brother that I did so.

Friday, the 19th, Captain Drake arrived, bringing a full cargo for my brother ; which was conveyed to the storehouse. And to my order he brought a free tailor, with his family, consisting of a youth of fifteen, bringing up to his own trade, and a wife and two young daughters. He also brought with him half a dozen she goats, for the benefit of the settlement.

One of the houses lately built at Allwood's Bay was given to the tailor and his family, which was fitted up for him with every thing needful. A she goat and a stock of poultry were given to him; and the same also now to the New Englanders, who had a lot next to him. Two of the remaining goats were sent to Peccary Field ; and the others retained at our plantation, where the stock by this time was much diminished.

We now began to dress all our people in regimentals for drill, and the tailor was set to work to alter such of the clothing as required it ; each suit being tallied with the man's name to whom it belonged, when finished.

Wednesday, April 7th. — Two schooners were reported in the offing: our colours were hoisted, and the gun fired. Captain Drake discovered one of them to be armed. The gun, therefore, was reloaded with shot ; and he armed the crew of the

Avon; and putting on his old midshipman's uniform, went out to reconnoitre, signals being agreed on. The alarm bugle was sounded; and the whole force of the colony collected, then dressed, and put under arms. I repaired to the flag-staff, and saw the Avon board the schooners. One of them had a pendant flying, which implied that she was a King's vessel; they were both Spaniards, and I recognised the merchant schooner as our old friend. They soon all filled their sails, and stood in for the harbour. I desired the Corporal to furnish the men with thirty rounds of ball cartridges, by way of precaution, and place all but the sentinels behind the house. In an hour or two the vessels came to anchor in Woodland Bay; and Captain Drake, having remained on board the armed schooner, was rowed on shore, with the Spanish captain, in his boat. Seeing with my glass, that the Spaniard was in uniform, the sentinel above the landing place was ordered to present arms to him as he passed; and also another of the soldiers, that had been planted before the mansion house, paid him the same compliment.

I received him in full dress not omitting my Adonis, with all possible courtesy; and having Diego for interpreter, asked him to what accident I was indebted for the honour of this visit. He answered, he was sent by the Governor of Santa Martha, in consequence of some trade with this island having been reported by the master of the schooner now in company with him. That the Governor was not aware of these rocks being inhabited, much less in the occupation of a British authority; and he was

therefore despatched to enquire into its truth. "You have seen and heard the truth, sir," replied I: "tell his Excellency, that you have seen the British flag, and heard our guns." — "But may it please your Excellency," said he, "I come in peace, — peace being long established between the two countries; and it is the desire of the Governor from whom I come, that nothing may occur of an unfriendly nature on his part: and I am directed, if your Excellency will favour me with a sight of your commission, to assure you of his friendship; and to put you in possession of the laws and regulations of his Majesty the King of Spain, with respect to our trade with the English colonies and settlements." Diego had some trouble to make out all this; but he was quite intelligible; and I have put it in such language as I suppose the Governor of Santa Martha would have dictated. I told the officer, it was an unusual request to show my commission to the commander of an armed vessel; but in the same spirit of amity he had been sent, I would send him back, and therefore he should see it and hear it. I then ordered the Corporal to parade the guard before the house, and went into the inner room for my commission. On coming out, I perceived the men drawn up on the open space; and before I sat down to read the commission, and show it to the Spaniard, I desired the Corporal to march them to the plank-house in a body, and in a quarter of an hour send Allwood back, with a corporal's guard of five, to lay on their arms near to the landing-place below. Having given these orders, as if it were a matter of course,

I read the commission ; which Diego interpreted to the Captain in the best way he could, and I then put it into his hands. He returned it immediately, with many apologies ; and then took a packet from his pocket, which he delivered to me. I instantly opened it, in due respect ; and by Diego's assistance, in about an hour I seemed to comprehend the purport of the communication. A great part was empty compliments ; among which, incredible as it may appear, were these words : "*and may your Excellency live a thousand years !*" — " You mistake, Diego," interrupted I ; " Methuselah fell short of that." — " O yes, 'tis, sir," he replied ; "*mille annos*, a thousand years." — " O, very well," said I ; " tell the Captain I return the same vain wish for his Excellency of Santa Martha."

The commercial instructions, as to what was, and what was not, *contraband*, and so on, were the subjects of an enclosed paper : I therefore sent to the storehouse for my brother, who was dressed as an English merchant ought to be, to hear these papers read by the Spaniard, and interpreted by Diego, and at the same time to take down the substance of the translation. I ordered a hamper of strong beer, and a good Gloucester cheese, to be put into the Spaniard's boat ; and wishing him "*mille annos*," he took his leave ; receiving the salute of the guard on embarking in his boat, to which Diego attended him. He returned me his thanks, by that faithful servant, for the present I had made him ; and in half an hour, accompanied by the Avon clear of the shoals, he stood out to sea.

The military body was now marched back, and

unclothed, all but the corporal and his three comrades. And a sufficient number of men being appointed to assist my brother, he proceeded to negotiate with the captain of the trading schooner; unloading her of her goods from Santa Martha, and loading her with such of his own as the Spaniard thought fit to take: and a profitable business it was, James having told me he did not clear less than 1000 dollars by his sales, besides what he might get on the Spanish cargo at Kingston.

All the tradesmen and every one else were settled with in a few days after the departure of the trading schooner, and Drake sent off again to Jamaica. There was little or no money yet coming to any of the people; but they were satisfied, and saw that in a little time that would not be the case. I had no order for Captain Drake, but to bring four new negro men, and as many girls; and I gave him 1100 dollars for the purpose.

During the absence of the schooner, our respective operations were going on. The sawyers had accomplished a good deal; the soldiers' lots were enclosed, and pretty well prepared for planting. My brother had done much to Peccary Field; and our settlement was cut off from the isthmus by a strong barricado from the Black Rock to the face of the promontory. And the barricado before the great storehouse was also completed; each having a strong gate; and the conduit from the spring to the grounds below the cotton tree was proceeding as fast as we could expect.

Saturday, May 1st. — Captain Drake arrived with a cargo for James, while we were at drill. We

were happy to see him, and the more so when he laid before us letters from England. Our brother and sister dined with us to-day; and as the schooner was not to unload till Monday, we enjoyed ourselves much by reading the letters, and with all the variety of news, public and private, he had brought us.

Business, too, had speeded well: four negro men, and as many girls, which I had sent for, arrived, and they cost rather less than the sum I had given to purchase them; the four men were instantly turned over to Diego, and lodged in the old kitchen, with his remaining two patriarchs, and one other negro that had been retained for agricultural purposes; two of the four girls were sent to Peccary Field, to add to our sister's establishment, and the other two kept with ourselves.

On Monday and Tuesday the schooner's cargo was discharged; and before the end of the week the conduit and its reservoir were completed. It was delightful, when the communication between them and the spring was opened at the source, to see the full body of water come pouring into the reservoir as clear as crystal; and in half an hour overflowing at a notch made for the purpose, and running in a small stream towards the sea; but in its course the thirsty earth gradually drank it up, many little channels having been made with a hoe to irrigate the cultivated ground. This capacious reservoir being covered over with thatch made of palm leaves, afforded a large supply not only of fresh but cool water to the settlement, without the people having to go through the woodland region to the spring-head, when our little cotton tree rill failed

them here; so that I considered this suggestion of my dear Eliza one of the finest things we had accomplished.

I took occasion on muster-day, to tell all hands to get in their crops with every possible despatch, as we might expect the rains in a week or ten days; and that I would have no drill on the next Saturday, to allow plenty of time for the work in hand. On Monday, the 10th, Diego set the example with his people: he commenced reaping the twelve acres south of Allwood's lot; and last, the fourteen acres at Peccary Field, which as yet had not been alienated. The corn, and the tobacco, and many of the roots, were got in by the 21st, and housed when the rains commenced, which lasted about five days. After they ceased, the remainder of the crop was taken up, and the grounds replanted with all expedition; in doing which, I took care to assist every one that required it; the ground now under cultivation out of my hands, being too much for the strength of the occupiers; and by the 31st of May all was finished.

During these operations, the sweet partner of all my cares and joys, and myself, had often conversed together on the propriety of making a visit to England; and having determined the matter, we now opened the subject to our brother and sister. They could not but acknowledge that we felt and judged rightly; and in a few days after, we convened the people, and told them of the necessity of my absence for a few months. On this occasion, several papers which had been drawn up, were now signed and delivered to the settlers; and their

verbal compliance with the terms stated therein taken before the congregation, and a note made at the foot of each paper to that effect. I then gave my brother a commission as my lieutenant, which was read aloud to them; and I expressed my hope that the people would be governed by him as they had been by me, who, I was sure, would do every thing for their welfare: and having appointed the following morning for a complete settlement of accounts with every individual of the colony, they were permitted to retire.

In a day or two after, all the accounts having been adjusted, I gave Diego a long interview; during which I expressed my attachment to him, promising him a mark of it at some future day, and desiring him and Rota to take charge of the house and plantation in my absence. I bade him look well after every thing, and to confer with my brother daily, giving him a report of proceedings. And I enjoined him to improve the grounds about our plantation as much as possible; also, to lend assistance to my brother, or to any of the colonists, when required; and to exercise six of his men, as frequently as he had time, in the six-oared boat, so as to make a crew of expert rowers for me on my return; and that he must learn to steer me; and that I wished the sandy beach of Long Bay, at Edward's Island, where the sheep were grazing, to be planted with cocoas nut trees; also, the front of Allwood's settlement with a double row of the Barbadoes palm, now growing in our nursery below the cotton tree. I particularly told him to mind the progress of the settlers' crops, to instruct

them in all matters thereon, and, as soon as they should get them in, to distribute the pigs among them; but, in the meanwhile, to feed the herd with our own produce. And if at any time he should discover that any of the people needed help in any way, to represent it to my brother, that it might be given; taking care at the same time not to encourage idleness, and to be watchful over the conduct of all persons, so that any irregularities, if they should arise, might instantly be repressed.

When I had done with Diego, I sent for Allwood, and told him I wished the mansion to be exactly doubled, by running up its counterpart at the back, so as to give us two halls and four bedrooms, as at Peccary Field; and when these were done, to surround the house with a lofty piazza, and to paint the whole a lemon colour, except the pillars of the piazza and window-shutters, which were to be green; and to let Manus prepare window-sashes, and glaze them, ready to put in after my return. The details of this subject were now entered into, and the various points settled to Mr. Allwood's satisfaction and to mine.

I next sent for Hart, and gave him the last of the new houses built at Allwood's Bay; to which boon my kind Eliza added a suitable stock of poultry, and a she goat with kid. This being arranged, I told Corporal Craig to take charge of the arms and ammunition; and I desired him to tell the soldiers I should expect them to take guard day and day about, from sunrise to sunrise, at the plank house, which in future should be reserved entirely for that military purpose; and

they were to have charge of the barrier gates, and storehouse, and boats, and canoes, near their post, and any stores or other things within their observation: and this was the duty they were to perform for the pay allowed them, being the same as king's pay. By these arrangements I hoped to guard against any bad individual, or individuals, that might be among us, or come among us, and my dear helpmate applauded my foresight; "the want of which," she said, "often exposes the foolish and the wicked to fall into a snare, which a little prudence and precaution might have prevented: and it is certainly better," continued she, "to prevent crime than to punish it."

After drill on Saturday the 5th of June, accompanied by my brother and Captain Drake, and Allwood and Hart, not omitting my faithful and intelligent Diego, we walked down towards the rocks that form the sea line of the open ground before the mansion. Here I pointed out a position within forty yards of the shore, where I proposed to erect a ten gun battery *en barbette*. And after a little consultation with Drake, we marked out a line of 120 feet, nearly parallel to the beach, flanking it at either end with a line of sixty feet at an angle of 135 degrees. Along the whole extent of this line, I proposed a brick wall of five feet in height to be built; and a bank of sand extending from the summit of the wall outwards, in a sloping manner, to be made so as to form a curtain to the battery. This work being planned out, I took the occasion of the presence of these chief men of the colony, to impress them with all I expected from

them in my absence ; and, to do them justice, my address was met by a good spirit on all sides.

Sunday, 6th. — We held a solemn festival to the Lord. And on the following day, my dear wife and myself, with our faithful little dog, together with our trunks, a box of fine shells, and the iron chest, (containing 1980 doubloons and 3800 dollars, besides the contents of the Spanish box of gold and silver articles,) embarked in the Porghee ; attended by our brother and sister, followed closely by Diego and Rota, and all the people, who crowded round us before we could step into the boat ; our older friends embracing our knees, or kissing our hands ; and thus, with the blessings of our people, and the blessing of God, we sailed out of the Northern Channel, with a fine breeze from the east, for Jamaica.

CHAP. VI.

WE had a long passage, owing to light winds; so that we did not arrive at Kingston until the 21st of the month. Our former lodgings having been sufficiently agreeable, and our brown landlady remarkably obliging, we were glad to find them unoccupied, and took up our residence as before. I was not now perplexed and overpowered with business, as on a former occasion, and therefore sat down very quietly with my dear wife after our landing, to make ourselves comfortable. I invited Captain Drake to dinner; and we dressed with some little attention to the prevailing fashion of society: but I would not again submit to the torture of a friseur; and therefore, after arraying myself in an embroidered waistcoat, popped on my trusty Adonis over my father-Adam-like curls, and looked sufficiently, I suppose, like a modern fine gentleman. Drake was an excellent fellow, but had no pretensions to modish attire; indeed, he despised it, and never could see me in my wig without a smile: I also could laugh at myself when alone; but before others, not excepting Drake, I took care to preserve my gravity and self-possession, without which I knew all external marks of a superior quality would lose their value; and I had too much mother-wit not to have ob-

served how much influence a grave countenance, under a well-dressed wig, has on society.

On the following day I took our passage in the Phoenix for London; she was quite ready for sea. And after having arranged the matter by paying Captain Tracey 500 dollars for our passage, in consideration of which he was to lay in all requisites both of stock and wine, I sat down with Drake, and entered on subjects highly interesting to himself and the settlement. I exacted a promise from him that he would not quit the command of the Porghee without my consent; and in reward for the hearty pledge he gave me, I raised his wages from 3*l.* to 5*l.* a month, and promised to make him a present of 100 dollars on my return from England. I desired him to look out for a young man, of good character and otherwise properly qualified, to go with him as mate, so as to be an available person to put into another vessel, or to go any distance in the Avon, or to take the command of the Porghee in case of his being ill, or any other casualty. He was much pleased with the proposition, saying he often had wished to propose it himself. I then recommended him to take out a quantity of paint and oils with him; and, when got back to our island, to have the schooner and the Avon and all the boats overhauled under the smartening brush. — “Besides, it is good for them,” added I. — “Yes,” said my Eliza, gently interrupting me, “and let the venerable old punt be painted, Captain Drake; it is a much valued relic.” — “It shall be done, Ma’am,” he replied. — “I admire your feeling on this oc-

casian, my dear Eliza," I rejoined; "it reminds me of an heroic people who were applauded by posterity for endeavouring to keep the old timber of some famous little ship together for five hundred years! I think I have heard of it from your worthy father."

After this little diversion from our business matter, I proceeded to direct our friend to have the barricadoes and the gun and gun-carriage also painted. I told him I had given orders to Allwood to the same effect about the mansion; so that he must calculate and purchase materials accordingly. — "Now, Drake," said I, "there is but one point more in which I must take a concern. My brother no doubt has arranged for the purchase of the cargo and all matters connected with it; but as I have thought it right to establish a military force as far as our strength will admit, and my brother being my lieutenant, I will thank you to purchase cloth and lace, and such other things as are necessary to make him a suit, to correspond as nearly as may be with the soldiers' clothing; and that all may be handsome, get him a proper sword and hat. And, before you sail, equip yourself with a midshipman's new suit; but bring me the estimate for all these things as soon as you can, so that before I go I may give you the amount. I wish these official matters to be a present from me to him and yourself." Drake liked these demonstrations of military array; and said he would accept of my present with much pleasure; and also take care that my views and wishes, now ex-

pressed to him, should on all occasions be complied with.

On Wednesday, the 23d, I had a visit from Mr. Green, from whom I learned that at present much sickness existed in Kingston; that the fever was prevalent every where in the low lands of Jamaica, and the mortality considerable. This information made me very uneasy: my first fear was for my beloved wife, the next was for the crew of the schooner, and for our colony, if any of the schooner's crew should be taken ill, and carry it there. We had not known what severe illness means at Seaward Islands, and I confess, I never till this moment contemplated the probability of such an event. After Mr. Green took his leave, my dear wife and I talked over the subject. — "Do whatever you think right, my Edward," said she: "it is required of us in all things to use circumspection, and the best means within our power, to avert calamities; and having done so, we may rely on the mercy and goodness of God to bless our endeavours." — "I hope, dearest," returned I, "the ship will soon sail, and under Providence this will be our safety. With regard to the others so valued by us, I will admonish Drake to take care of himself and people; and not expose himself or them more than necessary." In the course of the afternoon, my anxiety and fears were a good deal allayed by conversing with our hostess on the subject. She explained to me that the fever took new-comers only, chiefly soldiers and sailors; that native white people, and such as had been seasoned to the climate, escaped

it pretty generally; that people of colour and negroes seldom had any thing more than an ague now and then; and that the fever was never catching, unless it might be in ships and barracks, where many people were huddled together, and the fresh wind kept from blowing on them. I was happy to find her statement corroborated by others.

On Friday I embarked the iron chest, together with our trunks and other things. And having received from Captain Drake an account of the monies required for his disbursements, I paid him the amount; having done this, I presented him with a capital gold watch purchased for the occasion, which he received with becoming grace and manliness. — “This is a valuable present, sir,” said he; “but, either as a token of regard or a mark of approbation, from you it is doubly so.” — “Drake,” I replied, “you deserve it, and my approbation and regard along with it. Take care of your health, and we shall meet again.” He continued with us during the remainder of the day; all profiting by the opportunity, to discuss every matter of importance to the settlement that presented itself to our minds. In the evening he took an affectionate leave, charged with the disbursement of a few dollars among his men, and some small presents from my wife for her sister at Peccary Field.

Saturday, 26th.—Early in the morning, I settled with our brown lady hostess; and embarked, with my dear wife and our faithful little dog, on board the Phoenix, Captain Tracey. My first care was to see that all my things were safe in the state-room,

which had been allotted to us. After this inspection, my next duty was to politeness; and we were introduced by the captain to a gentleman and lady of the island, who, with their family, were our fellow-passengers. As we were heaving up the anchor, Drake came alongside, and, springing on deck, told me — “The men desired to see me again before I sailed, and that indeed he had the same wish!” I shook him heartily by the hand, and truly my heart was in the greeting. Martin and Purdy, and the New Englanders, and the two lads, soon followed him up the side, showing every demonstration of affection to us in their power. — “We all pray to God for you, good master, sir, and our lady,” said Purdy. Captain Tracey and the creole family looked at each other. — “Did you hear what that negro said?” whispered the wife to her husband. — “God bless you all, my good fellows!” I exclaimed; “I hope soon to return to you! and tell all the people, when you go back, that I shall think of them as my children.” — “God bless you, sir!” was the reply of all in one voice. — “And may He bless our good and kind lady,” added Martin, — “all our wives bless her!” — “Martin,” rejoined my dear wife with a parting word, “commend me to Mira and to her mother.” Some bowed, and some raised their hands to heaven, and retired to the boat. I followed with Drake to the gangway, and again shaking him cordially by the hand, bade them adieu; and they rowed for the shore.

The sea breeze set in about nine o'clock; the ship was under sail, and passed out of the harbour

in gallant style. The weather continued fine, and the sky bright, until we got into the Gulf of Florida, where we were much annoyed by mists and variable winds. However, no accident or circumstance occurred during the passage worthy of remark; and on Tuesday morning, the 17th of August, the ship arrived off Gravesend. Our fellow passengers instantly set off for London, in a coach and four; but I contented myself by sending off a note to Messrs. Perry and Co., with information of my arrival off Gravesend; stating also, that I had brought with me some doubloons and dollars, and some Spanish gold and silver manufactured articles of value; of which I sent an inventory, and requested them to despatch a clerk on board to meet me, and to take charge of the iron chest, on the arrival of the ship on the succeeding day.

We proceeded up the river the same afternoon; and before the ship came to her moorings, Mr. Child, one of the partners of the bank, came on board, and introduced himself to me. After the usual compliments, he asked me if the articles I had enumerated were in the ship's manifest; and when I answered in the negative, he said he was afraid they would be seized: and even if we could succeed in getting them entered at the custom-house, he could not answer for the difficulties that would be thrown in the way of paying the duty, and recovering them. "What am I to do," said I, "under such circumstances? I have no desire to cheat the revenue."—"The custom-house officers," he replied, "when they get them, will not be very scrupulous about defrauding you of them altogether,

if they can set up any plea for doing so." "Can they touch the bullion?" said I. — "If they find it in the same chest, they may; and I am not sure that they may not seize the ship also." I now became very uneasy, and proposed to throw the gold and silver articles overboard, rather than risk any of the possibilities he had suggested. My dear wife was present at this conversation. "My honoured husband," said she, "send for the captain instantly, and state the matter to him as it is." Mr. Child opposed this measure, as rash and dangerous. — "It is the only one that can with propriety be resorted to in the present exigency," rejoined I, "and I shall adopt it."

Captain Tracey and I had preserved a good feeling towards each other during the passage—he was an open-hearted single-minded man; I therefore hesitated the less in confiding this matter to his discretion. "Put the gold and silver muslin, or whatever you call it, in your trunks," said he; "and I will clap the rest down at the fag end of the manifest, as the property of Edward Seaward, Esq., passenger: they will admit every thing to entry but the gold and silver cloth." The banker was not quite sure that the captain was right, but I acted under his advice, disposing of the tissues as he directed; and without loss of time, with the assistance of Mr. Child, packed the other articles in a large box, (which the captain gave me for the purpose,) putting a card on the lid, endorsed, "Gold and silver articles, belonging to Mr. Edward Seaward, passenger, Phoenix; to be entered at the custom-house, London." After the arrangement

was completed, — “Well, madam,” said Mr. Child to my wife, “I think this may do: Mr. Seaward is happy in such a counsellor; and Mrs. Child will be happy in such an acquaintance.” My dear Eliza bowed, while I took her by the hand, making that silent acknowledgment to her on my own part, which, of all compliments, is the most grateful to a devoted heart. In the evening we disembarked, taking one trunk, in which was the tissue; and which the officer on board allowed us to do, on receiving a fee of 5s.; and that I borrowed from Mr. Child. He very politely accompanied us to the hotel in the Adelphi; then taking his leave, promised to send a clerk to bring the iron chest to his bank; who should also have in charge to convey our other trunks to the hotel, and to act with Captain Tracey in passing the gold and silver articles through the custom-house. We were once more happy in seeing ourselves alone with our dear little dog; and we greeted each other kindly on the occasion; Fidele also showing an excess of joy.

About the middle of the next day we received our trunks, with a note from Captain Tracey, saying he had much difficulty in getting the gold and silver articles admitted to entry; but he knew the demur was set up chiefly to exact *douceurs*; and that, as it could not be helped, he had got five guineas from my banker's clerk, on my account, which had accomplished the entry; and as soon as the duty was ascertained, he would let me know. I was well satisfied with this account of the matter; but it did not end here; for in the sequel I had

more trouble about the things than they were worth: a plea was brought forward upon some old act of parliament respecting popish relics, and I know not what; in consequence of which I had to swear that the crucifixes did not belong to Jesuits, and that they were not for the use of the Pope or his emissaries, &c. Nor is it quite impossible, if the laws against necromancy and witchcraft had not been repealed a few months before, that I should have had another string of oaths tendered to me, on the subject of obeas and talismans, as touching the triangular pieces of gold, and some other strange-looking articles in the box. The more oaths, the more fees: however, in about a month after I landed in England, I obtained the things, having paid in fees and duty upwards of 200*l*.

We remained within all day (Wednesday), walking out only a little in the dusk of the evening for exercise, it being almost as hot as in the West Indies. Every thing appeared quite novel to us, and our heads were made giddy by the noise and crowd in the streets; but happily for us our hotel was in a quiet situation. On repacking our trunks on Thursday morning, we perceived that our wardrobe would not do. The mode had changed considerably, even from what we had seen amongst the best dressed persons in Jamaica; and notwithstanding our vanity-despising humility of heart, we could not resist the desire of dressing like other gentry of easy fortune. While we were conning over this matter, Mr. and Mrs. Child paid us a visit; and after the ceremonies of compliment

were passed, my dear wife, with her usual ingenuousness, told her visiter how much she would be obliged for a little counsel on a subject we had been discussing; adding, "When we make ourselves look like other people, I shall be happy to return your kind visit." — "My dear Mrs. Seaward," replied our new acquaintance, "I shall be too happy, in assisting you to ruin your husband in any way!" My Eliza looked planet-struck; at length, recovering from her astonishment, asked what she was to understand by such a declaration? "O nothing," replied Mrs. Child, laughing; "*c'est une façon de parler*:" you shall go with me now in my carriage, and we will order whatever you wish." My sweet Eliza thanked her with great courtesy; but said, if she would have the kindness to send a milliner and mantua-maker to her, that was all the trouble she could think of putting upon her, but for which she would be much obliged. Her visiter pressed her much to accompany her, but in vain. The giddy Mrs. Child little knew the steady purpose of the one she was endeavouring to persuade to enter on a project, where a phantom so hideous at the outset, if it were nothing more than a phantom, had been held up to her mind. As this was a visit of ceremony, I said nothing to Mr. Child on business; and after rather a longer stay than ceremony required, the lady finding her importunities unavailing, at length rose, and they took their leave. "Many thanks to Mrs. Child!" said my dear Eliza, as we heard their coach drive away. "Jest and earnest, not unfrequently are like the shadow and the substance. I have seen the

shadow—it shall be my care to avoid the substance—I must be on my guard I perceive with that woman.” I smiled, but endeavoured to convince my Eliza that nothing was meant; that it was an idle flourish of the lady, and ought to be passed by as such: but she smiled in her turn, reminding me of my own maxim in other matters, as to the excellent quality of caution, and begged leave to be permitted to exercise it on this occasion.

Before dinner-time, the milliner and mantua-maker arrived; and also a tailor I had sent for. After a long consultation, and much discussion with these important personages, all points were at length settled; and on Saturday evening our undress suits came home. On Sunday morning we prepared for church, a happiness looked forward to by us with pleasure, ever since our arrival; and in truth we much needed some spiritual help, through the ordinary means of grace: for we felt the high tone of devotional feeling much subdued, since we quitted our intertropical paradise. My dear wife being dressed in the new mode, found great difficulty in walking with high heels, not having worn any for more than two years, and those were low compared with the present mode. Her farthingale too was cumbrous, and altogether she felt very uncomfortable; a little black hat with feathers being the only tolerable part of her attire. I had less to complain of; the good taste of my Eliza having decided for me against lace. My suit, therefore, was a plain one, for which I was thankful; deep ruffles had been appended to my shirts, at the breast and wrists; my knee and shoe buckles were handsome;

and as I would not submit to the torture of a toupee, my head was accommodated with a morning peruke in tie; and a plain hat, with a silver loop and button. Thus attired, we attended divine service in a hired carriage, at the church of St. Martin-le-Grand; and on our return to the hotel, after having dined, we endeavoured to keep alive the good habit of reading the Scriptures.

On Monday we returned the visit of Mr. and Mrs. Child, and left our names, they not being at home. I then proceeded to Lombard-street, where I met Mr. Perry, who took me into an inner room, leaving Mrs. Seaward the while in the carriage at the door. He lost no time in compliments, but proceeded immediately to converse on business: said he had to congratulate both himself and me, on his judgment in vesting my money in the three per cent. South Sea transferable stock; for that the fours would now certainly soon be paid off, to the great loss of the holders: that the threes had advanced, since he made the purchase for me in May last year, from 83 to 99, which latter sum was the quotation at Change Alley this day; and although the fours had also risen considerably, namely, from 105 to 114, yet whenever the ministry found themselves able to do it,—which they might accomplish this day, if they knew how to go about it,—they could pay off every hundred, with a corresponding hundred in money; that is, with a 100*l.* three per cent. stock, and the additional bonus of 1*l.* or 2*l.* “But,” continued he, “there are wheels within wheels, Mr. Seaward; and that which ought to grease the large wheel, is made use of to grease

the small ones. I am a Whig, sir, and a supporter of the king's government; but there is a want of principle in the men at the head of affairs, that would disgrace Change Alley. The truth is, men in office too frequently sacrifice principle to a momentary expediency, which to me is no small evidence of poor talents." Having said this with some degree of warmth, he apologised for having allowed himself to quit the subject of our business; but the truth I believe was, he had taken some pains to advise the minister on the subject of paying off the four per cent. stock; and his good offices having been treated rather negligently, he was piqued, and could not suppress his indignation.

I however thought the present a favourable opportunity to mention my wish to purchase a grant of the islands, and accordingly I broached the subject to him. "There will be some difficulty in it, I suppose;" he replied, "yet it is not three years ago, since grants of lands in the Island of St. Christopher's, were given, to the amount of 40,000*l.*, to portion off the Princess Royal, on her marriage with the Prince of Orange."—"But how shall I set about it?" I asked. He paused a little, then said, "There are so many ways, that I am at a loss how to direct you: if there was but the king's highway, I should not then hesitate to point out the road. Excuse me, Mr. Seaward," continued he, after another short pause, "but would you object to wade through dirty water to accomplish this business; or is it your intention to go to it simply as a man of business, and in that way put it to issue?"—"As a matter of business," I replied. "I will not ap-

proach the minister through any dirty channels. The truth is, Mr. Perry, I desire to accomplish the business with no other view, and for no other purpose, than securing the poor people already there, in their little possessions, made somewhat valuable to them by their own labour and my patronage; but with regard to my own advantage, I would freely bind myself to give all the money I may ever derive from it, to the minister's lackey, or to any one else he might choose to appoint." — "Give me your hand, sir," said old Perry; "I will endeavour to negotiate for you; but in these times a suspicion of indirect interest in the thing, will not be lost sight of; and until Sir Robert Walpole can be induced to see it as it is, he will suspect it to be something of more importance than you are disposed to admit; and so withhold the grant until he be satisfied in some way or other on the subject." I had no argument to offer against this, and therefore finished by accepting his kind offices in the business; adding, that I would rest the result on his endeavours, and my own integrity of intention.

This consultation being brought to a close, he urged me to invest the doubloons and dollars I had brought with me to England, in the three per cents.; but I told him it was probable I should have occasion for the whole money, and would therefore allow it to remain in Spanish coin. "Do not do that," said he; "send it to market; it will never bring a better price; and I will then place the amount to your credit, and allow you two per cent. for it; as I have hitherto done for all moneys above one hundred pounds, and it will then be equally at

your command as now." I did not hesitate, and fixed the next day to count out the doubloons and dollars, for the purpose of converting them into current money; I then shook the old gentleman cordially by the hand, and took my leave, — a favourable impression being made, I believe, on both sides.

My Eliza was not tired waiting for me, but she was glad to see me again; and as I stepped into the coach, my eyes were met by her endearing smile. "My Edward," said she, "I thought I had lost you." As we drove back to the hotel, I would have recounted to her all that had passed between Mr. Perry and myself, but the noise of the wheels, and of carts and other carriages, and of people bawling about the streets all sorts of things to sell, and chairs to mend, and bellows to mend, as if the crier himself had a pair of blacksmith's bellows within him, she could not make out a single sentence I uttered; I therefore covered my mouth with my hand, which diverted her a good deal, and placing my other hand round her waist to keep her steady, the rough-going coach jolted along, until at length we reached our quiet hotel.

While dinner was getting ready I detailed the banker's conversation, with which she was much pleased; observing, that it had been conducted quite in the way she liked, and she was "glad Mr. Perry showed his colours;" using an expression to which she had been much accustomed at our dear far-distant home, when Drake and I were discussing maritime matters; and she ventured to hope, from what had passed, that through the agency of Mr.

Perry the business would be done, if it could be done at all.

After dinner, Mother Osborne, our hostess, came in, with many courtesies and apologies, saying there was a tirewoman without, she could recommend, and if the Lady Seaward would see her she should feel obliged. (Mrs. Osborne was an unconscious prophetess.) My dear wife could not resist this; and where is the wife, under similar circumstances, that could? Madame Filibert was introduced, and she commenced her address in French. When she had proceeded for a considerable time with the complimentary prologue, in which "*milady*" and "*beaucoup d'honneur*" were repeated twenty times, my simple-minded Eliza told her she did not understand French; and therefore would only trouble her to show some of the head-dresses, if she had brought any with her, one of which, perhaps, she might take to oblige Mrs. Osborne. Two women were now called in, carrying a large covered wicker basket, out of which were brought indescribable things: they were placed severally on the table; and, to my great amusement, Madame Filibert took them up one after another, putting them on her own head before the looking-glass. One was *charmante*, another *magnifique*, a third *superbe*; but the fourth — "*O milady, regardez celle là; c'est une tire tête unique. J'avois faite la même pour sa majesté la Reine.*" It certainly was handsome, being made chiefly of gold tissue, but of a quality far inferior to that we had found in the cave. After some parley, my wife purchased it. "Now," said she, "Madame Filibert, is this the richest tissue of gold that is made?" The tire-

woman answered in tolerable English, that nothing in Europe could surpass it; if she did not speak true, she would give it for nothing. "I will not tie you to your word," returned my Eliza, "but I will show you a piece of tissue, with which it cannot be compared." She then went up to the bedroom, and brought down a piece of the plain gold; two of the four being richly wrought. The tirewoman, at sight of it, expressed her astonishment, exclaiming "It was all gold! there was never any thing like it seen in Europe! it was certainly from Persia, or China, or the gold mines." She anxiously desired a little bit of it, which my dear wife would have given to her; but at my whisper that some possible mischief might come out of it, she politely declined complying with Madame Filibert's wish: so the business concluded with her by paying for the tire she had chosen; on which Madame, with her women, made their obeisance and departed. This scene afforded us abundance of pleasantry for the evening.

On the following day we received an invitation to dinner from Mr. and Mrs. Child, and in consequence care was taken that our dress-clothes should be brought home in time. When the day arrived, we dressed: my dear wife's brocade was rich, and no doubt highly fashionable; the hoop large; the ruffles were of blonde, and she wore the tire purchased from Madame Filibert. I had presented her with a diamond necklace and ear-rings, the price of which is the only secret I ever kept from her in my life; but she placed it to the right account, and accepted them, as I gave them, with feelings of deep regard. My suit was embroidered

velvet, with white silk stockings, and a peruke in the best mode. As I took her hand to lead her down stairs to the carriage, she looked up at me with her own sweet smile, saying, "My Edward has given me a diamond necklace and ear-rings, — will he stop at the jeweller's, and give his Eliza a diamond ring also?" — "With the greatest pleasure, my beloved," I replied. The coachman was then ordered to stop on Ludgate-hill, at Harding's, where we both got out; and I was proceeding to choose for her a ring. "No, Edward," she said, "I must be selfish for once; it must be of my own choosing, and the finest brilliant I can find." In a little time she fixed her eye on a splendid gem, elegantly set, but not a lady's ring; then taking my hand, she put it on my finger, saying, "It is here I shall always love to see my brilliant:" then raising my hand to her lips, added to it a mark of her affection more precious than the gem itself.

We had not from thence far to drive to Mr. Child's, so that I gave a few minutes to Mr. Harding, as a proper finish to the affair; and notwithstanding the delay occasioned by this agreeable adventure, we arrived in very good time.

The company were numerous, and somewhat gorgeously attired; the dinner was sumptuous; and the liveries of the servants vied with their masters in the richness of the lace on their coats. We got through the ceremonies pretty well; but felt no inclination to copy the tone of conversation that was kept up afterwards. The subjects were low, and some of the expressions worse than low: the ribaldry of Fielding seemed to be the standard of

wit, and some of the coarsest jokes of the Dean the signal for a general laugh; the ladies drank rather freely, and few of them were without a snuff-box. I perceived early in the afternoon how much my dear Eliza was disgusted with the society around her, although the ladies commended her fine taste, and more than one gentleman told her she was an angel. In the evening Mrs. Child pressed her to take a seat at the quadrille table; and although she knew little of the game, politeness obliged her not to refuse. In the course of the evening a gentleman, Mr. Powis, who with myself had refused cards, engaged me in conversation. He talked on a variety of political subjects, with the merits of which I was totally unacquainted; I however listened with great attention, being glad of an opportunity to pick up information in any way; and as I listened with attention, so I took care not to disclose my ignorance, but masked it by a well-timed assent; now and then adding a short, but, I hope, pertinent remark. He told Mr. Child the next day, I was one of the most sensible men he had conversed with for many years. The truth is, he went on flowingly from subject to subject for an hour, without my ever crossing his path; and if I stopped him a moment, it was only to set him off again with increased vigour and self-approbation; and therefore, forsooth, I was the most sensible man he had conversed with for many years! A moralist might adduce a maxim by no means contemptible from this man's folly:—*It is easier to listen than talk yourself into some people's good opinion.* However, Mr. Powis took a fancy to me in consequence, and

afterwards, if I am not mistaken, interested himself to serve me.

At ten o'clock we returned home. I was well enough pleased with our entertainment; but my dear wife found little to approve, and much to condemn. She delicately observed, blushing while she made the remark, that there seemed to be a frightful looseness of thought amongst them all, in every way; and she would not conceal from me, that she had no doubt there was cheating at the card-table. One of the ladies having been detected in hiding spadille, made a joke of it, which was passed by as a thing mighty clever, if other people were blind or stupid enough not to perceive it. "I will play no more cards with such persons, my dear Edward," she continued; "and, unless it be to oblige you, or to forward our views in getting the grant for our people, I would desire to avoid all such company in future."

During the remainder of the week I was engaged in business, partly at the custom-house, on the subject of the gold and silver articles. But my first object was to ascertain the state of my finances. I had called at the bank agreeable to promise, and counted out 1900 doubloons and 3000 dollars from the iron chest, reserving 30 of the gold pieces and 300 of the dollars which remained, for my own use, lest I might at some future day require them. The doubloons had sold for 6650*l.*, and the dollars for 675*l.*, and passed to my credit. I now received my account current, in which I perceived 67,424*l.* in three per cent. S.S.T. stock, purchased at 83 in May of last year; and 2105*l.*

in the same stock, bought in January last at 95; the whole cost in money being 58,000*l.* After the statement of other items, *pro* and *con*, there appeared a balance of 9554*l.* 11*s.* 6*d.* to my credit this day, viz. the 28th of August, 1736. So that without taking the value of the contents of the box at the custom-house into consideration, or my brother's debt to me, I could estimate my fortune at nearly 68,000*l.* sterling, and my income from government securities upwards of 2000*l.* a year; each half yearly dividend being 1074*l.* 2*s.* Having thus ascertained the state and condition of my money concerns, I felt myself prepared to square my expenditures accordingly, although such conduct might not be quite *à-la-mode*.

On Sunday we attended church, morning and evening. And early in the week had the pleasure to receive letters from dear Mr. Goldsmith and my sisters, in acknowledgment of some we wrote immediately after our arrival. They hoped to see us soon; and we as sincerely hoped and desired to escape from the vortex we saw gathering round us, to the peaceful retreat of our virtuous, gentle, and dearly loved friends.

Some of the persons we met at Mr. Child's dinner called on us; they were visits merely of ceremony, which in due time we returned. But Mrs. Child had been teasing my wife to take a house and set up an establishment. She said I was as rich as a Jew; that Child had told her so: she insinuated that husbands did not let their wives into the secrets of their wealth, or their amours; and that she would bring her out with

éclat ; and if I said a word about it, she and the ombre party would teach me better manners ! My dear Eliza felt too indignant to take any further notice of this wicked counsel, than politely to reject the advice ; saying — “ Mr. Seaward and myself have arranged our plans ; and I, therefore, must decline following the suggestions of any one. I believe, while we remain in London, we shall continue at this hotel.” — “ No one will visit you here, my dear Mrs. Seaward,” replied her visiter. — “ If that be the case, Mrs. Child,” rejoined my wife, “ I perhaps may have reason to be glad that we have concluded not to take a house during our stay in town.” — “ Well to be sure,” exclaimed the banker’s wife, with a giggling laugh, “ that is the funniest as well as the most ridiculous thing I ever heard said in my life ! I heard something like it on the stage the other night ; — you surely picked it up there.” My Eliza made no answer. Mrs. Child continued the giggle ; then rising suddenly to depart — “ Well ! *bon jour, charmante !*” she exclaimed ; adding, “ I hope soon to have the pleasure to see you again, *cher ami*.” These attempts of Mrs. Child, although perhaps the offspring of folly rather than wickedness, were extremely disagreeable ; so that we agreed to mix with her society as little as possible ; and that I should strain every nerve to obtain the grant, that we might escape from the pestilence of London.

Sir Robert Walpole was at present out of town ; the King was gone to Hanover ; but the Queen-Regent was reported to be a kind-hearted lady, and might be more readily disposed than His

Majesty, to accede to my request. Mr. Powis had proposed to speak to Mr. Paxton about it; but I at once rejected indirect influence. Mr. Powis had said — “A couple of hundred pounds would get me the right ear of the minister, and that every one knew he was deaf in the other ear; therefore, it was of the utmost consequence to obtain a comprehensible hearing.” But I also had a right, and an unhearing ear, on some subjects; and Mr. Powis happened not to address me through my right ear.

However, early in September, the murder of Captain Porteus by the Edinburgh people, brought the minister to London to hold a cabinet council; and very soon after this, Mr. Perry contrived to solicit an interview for me, and procured a card with my name written on it, bearing Sir Robert's initials in one corner. My dear wife and myself rejoiced, when he called on me with the news of his success so far. — “Now, Mr. Seaward,” said he, “I hate bribery and corruption in all shapes; and I have reason to believe you are of the same mind: — but when you take this card, you must give a crown to the porter at the gate, another to the warder in the great hall, and half-a-guinea to the servant in waiting, who will show you into the secretary's room. And when you give him, I mean the secretary, the card, put a couple of guineas into his hand, wrapped up in a piece of clean paper, saying, “Sir, I will thank you to give this to those to whom I have given so much trouble.” I soon got my lesson, and thanked Mr. Perry for the trouble he had taken in the business.

The next morning I went to the minister's residence, at the hour appointed for my attendance; and passed the porter and the warder with silver keys, the servant in waiting with a small golden key; and next, having delivered my card to the secretary, and put two gold pieces, neatly wrapped up, into his hand, saying the precise words dictated by Mr. Perry, he made a gentle inclination of his head, and dropped the offering into one of his waistcoat-pockets, a pouch ample enough to contain a peck, Winchester measure. He took my card away, and, returning in a few minutes, desired me to wait. I was shown into a room where there were five gentlemen already in expectation of a summons. The anxious brow or enquiring eye was manifested in every face around me; but nothing passed beyond some remarks on the oppressiveness of the weather. In about an hour I was requested to follow the servant in waiting; but had scarcely got beyond the ante-room, when a person with a star made his appearance, desiring to see Sir Robert. I was therefore under the painful necessity of returning to the other expectants for half an hour longer, during which time three more gentlemen came in; no doubt all with silver and gold keys, and little packets for the secretary's enormous and very fashionable, pocket. I was at length again summoned; and being ushered into the minister's library, found him sitting before a large round table, in an old carved oak-chair, with a pen in his hand, surrounded by written and printed papers; and the moment I entered he began to write. — "You must not speak, sir, till

he is at leisure, and speaks to you," whispered the attendant gently in my ear. In a few minutes the great man laid down his pen, and without farther preface or ceremony, he addressed me, and the following dialogue ensued verbatim; for which I am not indebted to my memory, as will afterwards appear.

Sir Robert Walpole. — "I understand, sir, you want a grant of some island, or rocky islands, on the Spanish main: I wish to know upon what grounds you make this request?"

Mr. Seaward. — "I was shipwrecked, sir, nearly three years ago, on those rocky islands when on my passage from Jamaica to the Bay of Honduras. We had been driven out of our course by a hurricane; the vessel struck in the night; the captain and crew took to the boat, and no doubt were lost. Next morning the brig drifted in over the reef, and I with my wife were the only persons saved. We landed on the largest island, and remained there alone, making the best arrangement I could for our future comfort. In about six months afterwards, two negro men and three women, who had escaped shipwreck from a Spanish schooner, were also cast upon the island. We then all laboured industriously, to propagate yams and maize, with some other seeds and roots I had taken on board the vessel, for my use at the Bay of Honduras. Some months after this, having seen vessels pass, we took the brig's fore-top gallant-mast and ensign, and erected a flag-staff on the highest point of the land: very soon after it was done, I heard guns in the offing, and on ascending the height

saw a Spanish armed brig chasing an English schooner, and firing at her with her bow-chases: I immediately hoisted the colours, and the schooner made for the inlet. We had three or four muskets, and some boarding-pikes, I had brought from the vessel, which we carried with us for our own defence, should it be necessary. But, sir, I could not stand by and see the Spaniard firing at an English schooner directly under our flag, without making a return upon his decks; on which he hauled his wind and stood off. The schooner, which was of Norfolk in Virginia, came then safely to an anchor, and the Spaniard came to in the offing. In the night, however, he sent in his boat to take the schooner; but we met his boat with all the force we could collect, namely, six or eight of us altogether, armed with the muskets and boarding-pikes, and some axes and bill-hooks; and we succeeded in not only repelling him, but in taking from him ten muskets, with his ammunition, and two Bermudian negroes, his prisoners, that he had put in the boat as being good rowers. The officer gave up his sword; and I sent him and his crew back, thus disarmed, to their commander with a message, saying, that the conduct of the captain of the *Guarda Costa* was unpardonable, and it should be represented. — I am afraid, sir," continued Mr. Seaward, "I am tiring you with a long story; and if you please, here it shall end." — Sir Robert replied — "Go on, sir." — Mr. Seaward resumed — "After repairing some damages the schooner had sustained, I took a passage in her to Jamaica, and there purchased a Bermudian

vessel, in which I carried to the rocky island a new mainmast, a suit of sails, a captain and a crew for the brig in which I had been stranded; and also some artificers and negroes, with stock and implements, to settle a little colony where Providence had placed me. I applied to the governor of Jamaica for a commission as captain-commandant of the islands; that I might be legally authorised to repel any attack of the Spaniards against us, and to give protection to any vessel taking shelter from them among our rocks. And having obtained this credential, I took a twelve-pound gun to the island, which is now mounted on the height near the flag-staff; and I have trained the people to arms for defence, and have taken possession of the group of rocks and islands in the name of our most gracious Lord the King. I am, therefore, desirous to have a *grant* of all those rocks and islands, under the seal of His Majesty."

Sir Robert Walpole. — "This is a very serious business, sir; I have heard your version of it: the court of Spain may have occasion to represent it very differently. When the necessary enquiries have been made, my secretary shall have directions to require your attendance."

Mr. Seaward. — "Sir Robert Walpole, I should despise myself, and one I love dearer than my life would despise me, and the God I desire to serve would abhor me, if I could lie to you or to any man, or in one tittle deviate from the truth. If I had not loved and honoured my King, I need not have taken possession of those unpeopled rocks in his name. The Spaniard would have gladly ac-

knowledgeed them and me ! And in what way can I more substantially show my allegiance, than by offering to pay for a *grant* of that which is, in point of right, my own ? Neither England nor Spain, nor any other country, had ever thought it worth their while to take possession of those rocks ; and, as I am not a courtier, I hope you will pardon my free declaration, that if I am to be pushed by, and put off with the answer you have now given me, I will immediately go to Madrid, and try how the matter will be received there. Recollect, Sir Robert, if the King is to have a right in those islands it comes through my right : yet I wish to come to you for a grace ; but when I have grace, to ask as a favour, that which is a right, I do not see much grace in refusing a right, as if it were a favour."

Sir Robert Walpole.—"You are very warm, young man. If you were to go to Madrid, they would send you to the Castle for firing on their Guarda Costa, and in all probability you would be executed as an uncommissioned pirate. Call on me to-morrow morning, at ten o'clock, and I will see what can be done."

I called on the minister the next morning according to appointment, but instead of seeing him I got no further than his secretary. This gentleman was abundantly courteous, telling me I could not see Sir Robert, but that he would do every thing in his power to serve me and promote my views ; he even overwhelmed me with compliment ; said I ought to be made governor of Seaward Islands with a handsome salary, but that the hands

of the minister were absolutely tied ; Pultney and Wyndham, and some others, kept up such a continued alarm, that nothing could be done : however, he could assure me that the minister was well disposed towards me ; and if I could call in a few days, he would let me know when I might call again. But, he insinuated, that Sir Robert was rather displeased with my freedom of speech, and that he (the secretary) feared unless we could make a friend of a person, who has the ear of the minister, that he saw no end to my difficulties. — “ Then, sir,” said I, “ you have no instructions to arrange this business with me ? ” — “ O, bless you, sir,” he replied, “ businesses are not done in the kind of way you anticipate. At present I can do no more than promise my good offices ; and I have done so, relying on your good sense to make a grateful and proper use of them.” — “ I don’t understand your way of doing business, sir,” I rejoined ; “ and I have, therefore, only to beg you will accept my best acknowledgments in the same spirit you have offered me your best services.” The secretary stared at me ; and each bowing very low to the other, I retired.

On returning home, I detailed to my dear wife all that had passed. She commended me for my true and upright spirit ; saying — “ If you can secure the islands to our people by honest and direct means, even at the cost of a considerable sum of money, do it ; but disdain, as you have done, any admission of bad conduct ; or any overture of bribery to secretaries or go-betweens.” — “ Spoken like yourself, my best love ! ” I replied, “ I desire nothing more than your commendation

in all I say and do ; which never fails to secure to me my own approbation, and assures me of the approval of Him who tries all hearts."

On the following day I had a visit from Mr. Powis. After the usual complimentary conversation, he said, — " Well, I knew how it would be ; you had an interview with Sir Robert, and it terminated just as I should have anticipated." — " And how do you know what turn it took, or how it terminated, Mr. Powis ?" I replied. — " On your honour, Mr. Seaward, you will not disclose, while I live, any communication I may make to you ; and I will tell you more than you could suppose. I do not deceive you by saying, that you won on my friendship the first day I had the pleasure of meeting you at Mr. Child's ; and I am, indeed, anxious to serve you. I told you, that the minister has two ears, which, perhaps, you think a very foolish observation. You did not speak to him through the right ear ; although, I understand, you were very impressive ; so much so, that he said — ' I must know something more of this young man ; I should not like him for an enemy.' But this sort of Puffendorff reasoning, my friend," continued he, " with a prime minister, won't do. Therefore, if you desire to gain your point, be advised by me ; lower your tone, and get the right ear of the minister ; — which, by the bye, he does not wear on his own head ; only having there the left and t'other ear." Mr. Powis appeared to be so fond of this joke about the right ear, and seeming to lay so much stress on it, which being coupled by what the secretary had said about making a friend of a person " who had the ear of the mi-

nister," that I really began to believe there was an auricular pivot somewhere, on which only this business, and perhaps all others of a similar kind, could favourably turn. — "But," resumed Mr. Powis, "you have not promised to preserve inviolably, during my life, whatever I may impart to you?" — "I faithfully promise," I replied. — "Do you remember," returned he, "what passed between Sir Robert Walpole and you at the interview?" — "I certainly do remember the substance of it," I replied. — "Is that any thing like it?" he resumed, putting a sheet of paper into my hands. It was the dialogue itself. After reading it attentively, — "The very words," I replied: "you have astonished me, Mr. Powis; how is this? there was not any person in the room." — "You are right," said he; "there was not any person in the room, but Sir Robert and yourself; but there is a listening door, or rather a person within hearing behind a door, that takes down correctly the conversation held with every one admitted to an audience; and this is one of the minister's vouchers, for the uprightness and integrity of his conduct, which he always preserves in person. And I do believe he is an honest man, and means well," continued Mr. Powis; "but he is so beset, and finds so much difficulty in managing parliament, that he must preserve appearances, however ready he may be, under the rose, to grant through other channels any thing for a hope of parliamentary services; and, indeed, he is so hard driven in this way, that he has been necessitated to establish a sort of fund, which is fed by such means as

I have hinted at, for the purpose of securing votes from that quarter of the world 'from whence,' the Psalmist says, 'promotion cometh;' and the treasurer of this fund is the person who has his right ear. Do you understand me?" I thanked Mr. Powis with much sincerity for the disclosure he had made to me, and I gave him credit for the purity of his motives towards myself; but I did not feel that I could act upon the information he had given me; it would be a direct violation of my principles, and of the principles of one, whose approbation I courted in all matters involving the question of moral right. He endeavoured to laugh me out of my resolution, but it would not do. — "Why is all this, my good friend?" said I, "there is no absolute favour asked. A grant of some barren rocks in the Caribbean Sea is desired; and an equivalent ready to be paid. Lands were granted on the same principles, the other day I may say, in the Island of St. Christopher." — "You don't understand it," replied Mr. Powis; "there is always, in these cases, an abatement in the ostensible and visible price, which is to be accounted for to parliament, in consideration of a secret sum, or invisible influence, to support the minister in power." The problem was now solved; and he had nearly talked me over into the necessity of compliance, if I would carry my point, when my dear Eliza came in. He appealed to her, and went over his arguments again. She reflected a few minutes on what he had said, and then replied — "It is altogether morally wrong, Mr. Powis; the path is crooked; and to my

mind those considerations are quite sufficient to decide against all indirect overtures, whatever might be the result." — "Pardon me, madam," he replied, "if I say, it appears to me, you and Mr. Seaward are too fastidious, to accomplish any point of importance in life." — "There is no point, Mr. Powis," she replied, "of sufficient importance to call for the sacrifice of singleness of intention; without which, all is perplexity ending in remorse. And if Sir Robert Walpole cannot manage the parliament in any other way than you have explained, he is a foolish and a wicked man." Mr. Powis was not prepared for this honest eloquence, and here the subject dropped: but I felt I could not do less than ask him to dine with us in a friendly way, which he courteously accepted.

After dinner, the subject turned again upon obtaining the grant; and as the conversation I had had with the minister served to let Mr. Powis into a good deal of our history, I took care to make him comprehend that I had no pecuniary interest in the success of my application; that it was set on foot solely for the security of the people located there; and, if I were pertinaciously refused my request, I would first turn the place and people over to the Crown of Spain, and then, as I had an ample fortune, and should have nothing else to do, I possibly might get a seat in parliament, and trouble the Right Hon. Baronet in a way not quite agreeable to him. "I am, Mr. Powis," continued I, "a Whig in principle; but I feel that all the honour I bring to my king, is reflected on myself; yet, loyal subjects and faithful servants must not be

treated like dogs." Our friend was mute for some time : perhaps he had thought me rather an object of helplessness than otherwise, and as such had stepped forward to serve me ; and I thought his reply justified the conclusion ; but I may be mistaken. " As this is the case, Mr. Seaward," said he, " I might leave you to fight your own battle ; for it is odds you do not beat the minister." A smile of inward worth and strength passed across my dear wife's countenance ; and putting claret in her glass, " Come, Mr. Powis," said she, " we will drink the King's health, and all his true friends." Powis and I filled a bumper, as the monks would fill *au bon pere*, and we drank the toast, like honest and true men. Mr. Powis was a good-hearted man, at least I thought so ; and, as I said before, believed he had taken a fancy to me ; so, notwithstanding the issue of his kindly intended visit, I was not surprised he took leave of us in perfect good humour.

On the 23d, I got the box of valuables from the clutches of the custom-house officers, after paying the duties ; and was glad to find the contents uninjured and correct. We now began to think seriously of giving up any further attempt to procure the grant, notwithstanding what Mr. Powis had said as to my chance of beating the minister ; as I thought very differently from him on that point, and principle stood immovably in the way of the only now apparent practicable road. To-day, however, I had a call from Mr. Powis ; who told me, as I liked straight-forward business, he thought he could not please me better than by putting the de-

claration I had made at our last interview in a train to reach Sir Robert Walpole, to try its effect; and he knew the minister had, in consequence, written a note to Mr. Perry, to enquire whether I were the man of property I represented myself to be; and that Perry had replied, "he knew nothing more of my property than that I had a very handsome balance in his hands, and held upwards of 60,000*l.* in three per cent. stock." I thanked Mr. Powis for his information, and told him that he and Mr. Perry both had acted perfectly right.

I waited anxiously for a week, venturing to hope that something might come out of this; but, being in the end disappointed, I began to suspect the accuracy of the statement Mr. Powis had made; and I therefore put the question to Mr. Perry, with respect to the minister's note, which he acknowledged to be correct, but added — "I cannot imagine how you can have come to the knowledge of the communication; for it was endorsed private, or I certainly would myself have told you." I replied, that I was quite satisfied with his conduct; and as the communication to me was also endorsed private, he must excuse my not disclosing it. He then turned the conversation to the subject itself, and said, he feared I was too inflexible in my principles to succeed with the minister; but deeply regretted the despicable policy of expediency that actuated all his measures, by which he surrounded himself with rotten sticks, and often lost the support of a staff of true British oak, for a consideration in itself not worth a straw. When this discourse drew to a close, I told him, if nothing occurred to prevent

it, I should leave town next week, and act according to circumstances.

On Sunday we visited Greenwich, and, after attending divine service at the chapel, had the gratification of seeing the beautifully painted hall, finished a few years ago by Sir Christopher Wren, now no more. It is all very fine, or rather imposing, excepting what I would call the altar-piece; in which two miserable portraits of His present Majesty and the Prince of Wales are introduced. Here, to my great surprise and joy, we met Captain James and his wife; with whom we had the pleasure of dining, and passed altogether an interesting and highly agreeable day.

On Monday, the 4th of October, we began to pack up for quitting London, to revisit our dear friends at Awbury. While thus engaged, a lady called and sent up her name — Lady Sundon. My dear wife was soon ready to meet her; which she did with that courteous ease and dignity that ever flows from a noble and ingenuous nature; apologising, nevertheless, for being obliged to receive her in such a place, not as yet having any home in England, and being at this moment on the move from London. The stranger replied, that an apology was rather due from her, for venturing an intrusion; but she hoped the object of her visit would plead her excuse. After being seated, she said she had called by command of the Queen; who, having heard that Mrs. Seaward possessed some very rich gold tissue, superior to any thing ever seen in Europe, Her Majesty had honoured her — Lady Sundon — with a command to purchase it at

any price, if it were indeed what it was reported to be.—My dear wife smiled. “That cannot be, madam,” said she; “but I shall be most happy to present some pieces of gold tissue, or any thing else I am possessed of, to Her Majesty.” — “I fear,” replied the lady, “the Queen cannot accept of it from Mrs. Seaward.” — “Then,” rejoined my wife, “I shall have to regret, for once in my life, that I am only Mrs. Seaward.” After a pause, the stranger requested to be gratified with a sight of the gold web; and, in compliance with the wish, one of the richly wrought pieces (which the tire-woman had not seen) was shown to her. She was struck at once by its incomparable richness, and could not restrain her admiration, observing — “This, truly, is fit for a queen.” I now left my dear Eliza and the lady together. It seems they soon became sociable, for I found her still with my Eliza, after an hour’s absence. My well-judging wife had profited by the opportunity, to give her an outline of our shipwreck, and of our little settlement; and also told her, that our business in England was to purchase from the Crown a grant of the islands, so as to secure our people in the possession of their grounds and habitations; but as we could not succeed in obtaining it, we were going away, and would try to establish them as well as we could without it. She did not, in the course of this conversation, omit to mention how we had trained them to the observance of divine worship, and to reading on the Sabbath-day. Lady Sundon was a kind-hearted, and somewhat pious woman; so that she took great interest in the detail, and, on taking

leave, promised to endeavour to persuade Her Majesty to allow Mrs. Seaward to present the tissue for acceptance. "But, at any rate," added she, taking my wife's hand, "I hope you will not leave town immediately. I am desirous of cultivating your acquaintance, and I would say your friendship." My dear wife returned her a suitable compliment, and I had the honour of handing Her Ladyship to the carriage, which bore the royal arms.

After the departure of this lady, my Eliza and myself turned the matter over, and hoped it might prove one of those mysterious interpositions of Providence, to accomplish that for us which we had failed in ability to do for ourselves, and, in consequence, were about to abandon as hopeless; we therefore determined to wait the issue of this adventure.

On Tuesday, my wife had a second visit from Lady Sundon, who imparted to her the pleasing intelligence, that the Queen would receive her at the palace on Thursday; and it had been arranged that Her Ladyship, who now told us she was Mistress of the Robes and Lady in Waiting to Her Majesty, should call in a royal carriage for Mrs. Seaward, and accompany her to the presence. I soon begged permission to retire; and having left them together, Lady Sundon very kindly entered into all the minutiae, with my wife, of the honour intended her. The dress she was to wear was then settled, and the etiquette to be observed was pointed out; but there was a point, on which Her Ladyship had directions to be informed. "What is Mr. Seaward?—is he a merchant?"—"He was a merchant," replied

my wife: "he is no longer one. He gave up his business entirely to his brother, and is now in the possession of an ample fortune." — "I wish he had rank of any kind," replied Lady Sundon. — "The only rank he has, that I can mention," returned my wife, "is that of Captain Commandant of Seaward Islands; and I think I can show Your Ladyship his commission, signed by the Governor of Jamaica." My Eliza soon laid her hands on the document, and showed it to her noble guest. "That will do," said she; "I am glad to know this; it may be of some importance to you, at least in your introduction to Her Majesty, if nothing more."

The next day, I was surprised early in the morning by a visit from Mr. Powis. "You will have a message this morning," said he, "to attend the minister; be therefore in readiness. He says you are like Cassius: he must be wary of such like men." — "Let him know," returned I, "that I am not like Cassius;—but," continued I, "you are indeed very kind, Mr. Powis; you have acted towards me with a steady and persevering friendship, notwithstanding I have rejected your counsel." — "I esteem you the more, Mr. Seaward," said he, "for having done so, although it proves you have little experience in life." He had scarcely finished the sentence, when the note arrived from Sir Robert's secretary, desiring my attendance at ten o'clock. I hastened to dress in my plain suit, in which I had paid my former visit, and was punctual to the appointment.

Mr. Secretary was superabundantly courteous on the occasion; so that I was admitted at once into

the library. The minister was not there; but came in presently, by a door that led from it into some other room or passage; — perhaps this was the listening-door spoken of by Mr. Powis. “I am glad to see you, Mr. Seaward,” said he: “draw a chair by me, and we will talk over this business of yours.” Then taking up a chart of the West Indies, that lay on the table — “Show me where the rocks and islets are situated, for which you want the grant.” I looked on the chart attentively a little while, then said — “They are not laid down here, Sir Robert; unless the Seranhas are intended to represent them.” I then drew cross lines through the latitude of $14^{\circ} 30' N.$ and $81^{\circ} W.$, saying — “This is as near the spot as I can tell you. The latitude is correct, but the longitude has not been ascertained by observation.” He then desired to know their extent; which I described to him with as much accuracy as I could. “Now,” said he, “tell me honestly, what is your object in seeking to obtain this grant?” I told him. He shook his head. “I am not surprised, sir,” said I, “that you do not credit me in such disinterested conduct; but I speak the truth; and I will bind myself not to appropriate rents or profits to myself in any way, from the grant, beyond freely bestowing its privileges on such persons as I may approve, under the penalty of forfeiture of the money I may pay to the Crown, and of the grant also.” — “Well,” returned he, “I perceive you understand the strong side of an argument — the *argumentum ad res*; and I will take you at your word. Now,” continued he, “who is to estimate the value of this place?” — “Any one

you please to name, sir," I replied, "if you will have the kindness to settle a principle on which the valuation is to be made." — "You are no contemptible diplomatist, sir," said the minister. "Will you favour me," continued he, "with a principle?" — "I know of none, sir," I resumed, "that will apply; but, for want of a better, I would take the average price of the uncultivated lands of St. Christopher's, sold three years ago on account of the Crown." — "That will do, I think," replied he; "but how shall we estimate the extent?" — "I can supply that, sir," said I, "as I have a rude survey of the rocks and islands, which can be measured; and I should wish my map, such as it is, to be copied, and appended to the patent." — "Mr. Seaward," answered the minister, "it shall be settled in your own way; I am happy to meet your wishes. I have satisfied myself that you are not a needy adventurer, and I am disposed to serve you. My secretary shall wait on you, with proper persons on the part of the Crown, within a few days; and the business shall be done." I thanked him for his kind condescension, and ventured to express a hope, that I might find an occasion, at some future period, to show the sincerity of my professions. Sir Robert bowed, and I took my leave.

On my way home, I ruminated on the great change I had witnessed in the manner and conduct of the minister towards me, but could not satisfy myself as to the cause. It can never be that he has been frightened into the measure, by Mr. Powis's report of my declaration. O no; it were presumption and folly to think so. Perhaps he is belied, in

his desiring to make a market of this trumpery business, for the sake of getting a little money towards a fund for corrupt parliamentary purposes. He had a right to be on his guard against a stranger; and I think there is a sufficient explanation of his conduct, in what he said as to his having instituted an enquiry, and that he was now satisfied as to my being no needy adventurer. However, be this as it may, said I to myself, "if the thing be but done, and honestly done, it is of little consequence to me how it was brought about."

My beloved wife was rejoiced at my success, and not less gratified by the respectful civility I had received. She, too, endeavoured to account for the wonderful change which somehow or other had been wrought in Sir Robert; but was as much at a loss as myself to solve the riddle satisfactorily: I told her all I thought, to which we added many other surmises; but of one thing only we were certain—that I had not waded through dirty water to the object.

My dear Eliza now entered on the subject of her *presentation*, to take place to-morrow; and told me she had ordered a white satin dress, with a Spanish hat of the same, which was to be surmounted by two ostrich feathers, agreeable to Lady Sundon's arrangement. "Dear Eliza," said I, "you ought to wear pearls with this dress; and I shall be highly gratified in presenting them to you."—"So I thought," was her reply; "but as her Ladyship said nothing about them, I made up my mind to say nothing either, for they are expensive ornaments, and you have already laid out more money on my

neck, than it is worth ; therefore, I am content to go to Court in perfect simplicity of attire." " Ah ! my sweet pet," I replied, " thy neck is worth more than all the pearls of the Pacific, and all the diamonds of Brazil ! we will go together to the jeweller's ; and I shall be happy indeed, in contributing so small an addition to your innate value." Before dinner-time we made our purchases ; necklace, earrings, and a pearl loop, with a diamond star for the hat, and a pretty little brilliant ring besides, which I quietly put on her finger : for the amount of which, with unfeigned pleasure, I gave an order on my banker for 130 guineas.

On Thursday, at noon, the royal carriage called with the Lady Sundon. My lovely wife was dressed, and ready to receive her. " Dear Mrs. Seaward," she exclaimed, " you look like an angel just dropped from heaven."—My Eliza blushed, and taking her by the hand, said—" Then I must apply to my husband, and to you, the words of Mr. Pope, to Orpheus and St. Cecilia." Her Ladyship paused, not immediately recollecting the allusion : seeing it was so, my beloved and peerless one repeated the lines, turning first to me, and then to her—

" He raised a mortal to the skies,
She drew an angel down."

Something beyond the ordinary tone of feeling followed this, in which our noble visiter bore a part ; and she finished the scene in perfect keeping (as painters express themselves), by quoting from our new but admirable poet, Thomson —

“ Oh happy they, the happiest of their kind,
Whom gentler stars unite.

I will tell the Queen all this,” continued she; “ I am sure her Majesty will be quite delighted.”

The two pieces of embossed gold tissue had been wrapped in a piece of white satin; the original curious paper wrappers being previously folded round each piece. The parcel was placed in the carriage; and my dear wife then taking leave of me, by kissing my forehead as I bent my head towards her, whispered—“ Do not be uneasy about me; I feel quite collected, and assured under the protection of this kind lady.” Lady Sundon made her precede her to the carriage, and I had the honour to hand them in.

After their departure, I received a visit from Mr. Powis. He met the carriage just as it turned up into the Strand, and had recognised Mrs. Seaward.—“ Well, my good friend,” said he, “ I am come to congratulate you on your success with the minister; but do tell me how you think it has been brought about?”—“ I cannot tell you, my kind friend,” I replied; “ you know quite as much about it as I do; therefore, if you cannot explain it, I have not a ground to surmise on.”—“ It is very strange,” cried he; “ no *car-tickling*—no *palm-tickling*; if he was not talked into it by what you said to him, or alarmed into it by what you said to others, backed by the result of his enquiries to Perry, I cannot account for it. His secretary cannot account for it; the thing is altogether out of common course: but,” continued he, “ I saw Mrs. Seaward in one of the royal carriages; there may be some-

thing in that I don't know." — "If there be any in that," I replied, "perhaps Sir Robert having so much to do with Highland chiefs, some of them, or their seers, through the second sight, may have apprised him of what would happen, so that he has been before-hand with royal favour." — "Upon my life, Seaward," said Mr. Powis, smiling, "you are too bold: what would Sir Robert say, if he were to hear of this *repartee* at his expense?" — "I should be heartily glad of it," I replied; "nothing would make me more proud, than that he should come to the conclusion, that I am very unlike most men of the present day." My friend Powis seemed a little staggered what to make of me; and, indeed, so was I with regard to him. He began to think he had yet to make me out; and I began to think I had made him out. I don't know whether he took me for the Czar, risen from the dead, and in disguise; but I began to suspect him of being the right ear of the minister, on the whispering gallery appended to it; and, therefore, I put on my old armour of caution. He endeavoured again to agitate the question, as to the cause of my success; and tried many indirect questions, to elicit from me where Mrs. Seaward was going, and who it was that he saw with her in the royal carriage. I told him I did not deem myself at liberty to speak of Mrs. Seaward's movements, to my most intimate friends; there was a delicacy connected with every action of a woman, that forbade it: he felt the rebuke, and here the subject ended.

After some trivial conversation, Mr. Powis left me; but I must confess I was not easy after he was

gone, lest I had wronged him in my mind; for he certainly seemed ever earnest in his desire to serve me, and had taken much pains to do so, as far as giving me information went; and it might be, that considering himself a connoisseur in matters of ministerial favour, and now taken by surprise at what had occurred to me, he was anxious to solve a problem, to his mind out of all rule.

Reflections on Mr. Powis, soon gave way to a subject nearer and dearer to my heart; how it fared with my gentle Eliza, in her new and trying situation: but I had confidence in her good sense, her fine discrimination of propriety in all situations, her native dignity, yet suavity of manner, and, not least, in her youth and beauty; for in truth, if the words of John Milton were ever applicable to any human being, they were to her, when she and Lady Sundon left me:—

“ Grace was in all her steps, Heaven in her eye,
In all her gestures dignity and love.”

At three o'clock my beloved returned. I received her with open arms. “Dear Edward,” she exclaimed, “we are met again!”—“But tell me about the Queen, dearest,” said I, “and how you got through your part of the interview.”—“O, quite well,” she replied; “but it was all ceremony. On our arrival at the palace, we were received by a gentleman in waiting, who escorted us to the ante-room. The parcel was brought up by some one, and placed on a marble table with gilt legs, which stood between two of the windows. In a few minutes another lady in waiting came to us; when

Lady Sundon introduced me to her as the wife of Captain Seaward: this second lady took my hand; and while my friend (as I think I may call her), walked by my side, I was led into a room, where her Majesty was seated:—‘Courage!’ the lady whispered in my ear; and almost immediately after, letting my hand drop, courtesied gracefully to the Queen, saying, ‘I have the honour to present the wife of Captain Seaward to your Majesty.’—‘You are welcome, Mrs. Seaward,’ said the Queen; ‘I am happy in seeing you here.’—‘I am too happy,’ I replied, ‘in finding myself in the presence of our illustrious Queen: I shall be happy in the recollection of this day, until the latest period of my life.’ I had scarcely finished the sentence, when Lady Sundon put the parcel into my arms; and, agreeable to previous arrangement, I then approached quite near to her Majesty, and dropping on one knee, laid the parcel at her feet, saying—‘If your Majesty will be graciously pleased to accept this small tribute of affectionate loyalty, from the hands of your most devoted servant, your condescension will leave the deepest impression of gratitude on her heart.’—“Well done, Eliza!” I exclaimed; “Lady Sundon could not have played the courtier better herself.”—“Dear Edward,” replied my wife, “it was a set speech, dictated by her Ladyship for the occasion: but I certainly did feel what the words said.”—“Well, my love,” said I, “tell me all the rest; I have been very rude to interrupt you, and have shown clearly enough that I never have been at Court.” My dear wife then resumed her account of the presentation:—“Her.

Majesty merely replied, 'I have much pleasure in accepting any thing from your hands, as a proof of my esteem for a good wife in trying circumstances.' My friend Lady Sundon now took my hand and raised me, for I was a little affected by the compliment; then courtesying together before the Queen, her Majesty made a sign that we might retire: so we obeyed; but keeping our face towards the royal person, until we got out of the presence, into the ante-room. Here my kind friend immediately kissed me, saying — 'Dear Mrs. Seaward, you have acquitted yourself nobly: the carriage is in waiting for you; hurry home to your husband, who will be made happy by the accounts you have to give him.' I took leave of Lady Sundon, in a manner her cordiality deserved; and at parting she promised to call on me in a day or two. A gentleman in waiting handed me to the carriage; and now, here I am, my dear Edward, with the sovereign of my heart."

The week passed away without seeing her Ladyship, or hearing any thing from Sir Robert's secretary relative to the grant. But it was soon known amongst our acquaintance, that my wife had been introduced to the Queen; and she was in consequence pestered with visits from Mrs. Child and her friends, now doubly pressing in their invitations, and not very delicate in their enquiries. But strange as it may appear, the object of my wife's presentation was never known beyond the circle then present, all of whom were freemasons in petticoats. And, indeed, I have reason to believe that not even Sir Robert Walpole himself, nor the prying Mr. Powis, could ever ascertain the precise

matter, whatever suspicions might be entertained on the subject.

My dear wife could not but complain of the troublesome daily visits of Mrs. Child; on account of which I advised her to give the lady a rub that she richly deserved. "Say to her," said I, "that you are astonished to see people of fashion paying visits to a person in a hotel." — "That would not be like us, my dear Edward!" she replied: "I might have done so a little time ago; but now, that a woman of quality has visited me here, it would carry an air of insolence in it, which, on reflection, I am sure you would not approve." I was convinced. "You are right, my love!" said I; and the subject being thus disposed of, we put on our things, and strolled out to refresh ourselves by a walk in St. James's Park.

On Sunday, the 12th, we attended divine service at St. Paul's; and were much delighted, both by the organ and by the chanting; and much edified in hearing an impressive sermon from one of the prebendaries. On our return from the Cathedral, my dear wife received a kind note from Lady Sundon; importing that she had been indisposed, but was now better, and would call at the Adelphi on Tuesday.

On Monday, one of the minister's secretaries made his appearance at my hotel, with two gentlemen on behalf of the Crown, to settle the conditions of the grant. After the usual ceremonies of introduction, we entered on the business; and I produced my chart. The deputy surveyor-general, who was one of them, said, it appeared to be ac-

curate; bearing internal evidence of having been done by a person who knew what he was about. To a question he put, I answered, "It was done by the captain of a schooner, I kept to go occasionally to Jamaica." As there was a scale to the chart, the royal surveyor very soon measured and calculated the area of the islands. He made the peninsular promontory to contain two square miles; George's Island, beyond the isthmus, nine square miles, Edward's Island, six square miles; in all 7880 acres. This point being settled, I stated the principle agreed on by the minister and myself, as to the valuation. The gentlemen said, they were aware of it: and that 5s. per acre was the average price of the lands granted at St. Christopher's. The calculation on these data being soon made, it was found that the purchase-money would amount to 1970%. An observation then fell from one of the gentlemen as to the detached rocks, and the long sandy isthmus, not having been taken into account: "Well," said I, "let us put down the odd 90% in consideration of these, and all others in, near, or belonging to the said islands." After a little demur, my proposition was agreed to. "Now gentlemen," resumed I, "the business is settled; requiring only to be carried into effect." — "Just so, sir," said the secretary. "Well, then," I rejoined, "when the deed is made out, and has received the royal signature, I shall be happy to pay the money, and such fees and charges as may be usual in such cases." The deputy surveyor-general requested the loan of my chart, to have two copies of it taken: one, to append to the deed; the

other, to lodge in the office: and the business being now quite arranged, they took their leave.

On the following day my wife received a visit from Lady Sundon; and the meeting was cordial. My Eliza said to her noble guest, — “If I had not feared it might have been an intrusion, I would have come to see your Ladyship when you were sick.” — “Come now,” replied Lady Sundon; “if Mr. Seaward will spare you one day to me, I should be most happy!” My dear wife looked at me — “Will you spare me, Edward?” — “Certainly,” said I, “to that lady; who, I perceive, is really attached to you.” — “Indeed I am,” exclaimed her Ladyship, taking my wife’s hand in the most kind manner. “You will not think strange of this hesitation on my part,” said my Eliza to her friend, “when I tell you, that we have not been separated a whole day, at any one time, since I became Mrs. Seaward! And indeed,” continued she, “I am so happy, where every woman ought to seek her happiness, that I have no desire, except in such a case as this, to be absent for a moment.” I took my Eliza’s hand, and put it to my lips. She then begged permission to go and dress, which she would soon do; and left me with her Ladyship. The first words of this excellent woman were like sweet music to my ear. — “She is a divine creature!” said Lady Sundon; “so unlike all the women I see of the present day! and I assure you the Queen is quite charmed by her beauty, and her manner, and her propriety: and I rather think she will see her Majesty before we return; but not being certain of it, I do not like to say so to her,

lest my sweet friend should be disappointed." Her Ladyship then asked me, if I had accomplished my business as to the grant with the Crown officers. I told her, it was definitively arranged yesterday, and would soon be made out, and I hoped immediately presented to her Majesty, as Regent, to sign it. "Now, Captain Seaward," resumed the lady, "I will tell you a secret: the Queen has not been very well pleased with a certain person, for the course he intended to pursue with respect to your affair; she spoke to him on the subject, and soon became peremptory; and it is only in consequence of this, that the business has been done. You therefore now know to whom you are obliged: and do take care," continued she, "not to throw away your money on persons who may endeavour to persuade you the obligation is in any other quarter. The Queen knows all that passed between the minister and yourself, and between you and other persons, on the subject, and expressed her admiration of your spirit, and of the sentiments you avowed on the occasion. He was a good deal piqued," added Lady Sundon, "when her Majesty gave him her commands; and he ventured to say, with a smiling bitterness, 'Perhaps your Majesty would approve of our sending him as envoy to Madrid,' — to which she drily replied, 'Cassius is not to our liking, Sir Robert:' then receiving his leave to retire, he bowed, and withdrew; evidently a good deal nettled. I believe, however," continued her Ladyship, "you have nothing to fear from him; he has nothing to gain by annoying you, but may risk the royal displeasure: and I am quite sure you may

count on her Majesty's protection, and his compliance." My wife now joined us; and after thanking her Ladyship for her great kindness, I handed them to the carriage, and saw them off.

Fidele—our dear little Fidele! was the representative of his mistress to-day; I therefore talked to him sometimes, by way of consoling both him and myself, in her absence. "Well, poor fellow," said I, "you were once our chief delight and care; now you receive only a transient kind word, or a look; but we do not esteem you the less, Fidele; come here, poor dog!" He raised his fore-feet on my knee, and licked my hand; and said all that a dog could say, in return. He spoke not with the tongue, that may lie; but with the eye, and demeanour, that generally speak truth. Being first favourite to-day, I helped him to the wing of a chicken, "You like that better than *pepper-pot*, old fellow!" said I: he looked very knowing as he took it from my hand; which I interpreted, "Indeed, I believe I do." Thus I played the fool, as fools would call it; giving a truce to all anxieties respecting the completion of my grant, or the favour of the Queen.

In the afternoon I took a walk to Palace Yard, to amuse myself: looking about me with interest or admiration on many of the buildings in that quarter; but especially on the Abbey of Westminster. Then wishing to prolong my stroll, I turned towards the river, where a great many people were at work on the foundation of the new bridge. I here met Mr. Powis, with two other gentlemen, one of whom had accompanied the minister's secretary, to arrange with me about the grant. Mr.

Powis expressed himself most happy to meet me; and after some conversation, he proposed to go to the Bell and Sun, in King Street, to take a bowl of punch. I objected to this, saying, "I should not like to be seen in a tavern." — "Bless you," cried he, "Sir Robert Walpole, and some of his friends from the country, dine at that tavern almost every day while Parliament sits, previous to their going down to the House of Commons." — "As that is the case," I replied, "I suppose we need not be ashamed to be seen there." So accordingly we went, and drank a couple of bowls of punch. We had scarcely sat down, when the conversation turned on the topics of the day; during which a variety of political subjects were discussed. I took no part in it: but the debate soon ran high between the two gentlemen I knew, and the stranger. I soon perceived he was no friend to the minister, for he would not accede to anything they said either in commendation of Sir Robert or his politics. In the course of this altercation, the stranger gave vent to the following philippic. "Sir Robert Walpole says, he is a Whig: it may be so; but I never could discover it in his politics, as far as I am acquainted with them. If I did not know that Pultney and most of his set are Tories; judging by their sentiments, I should set them down as Whigs—and Whigs, too, of the first order. But all distinction is confounded by the different light in which situation places the the leaders of party; so that, I presume, we must consider public men to be in some respects like the chameleon, who changes his colour according to the ground he stands on: yet,

I do not mean to say, that, like him, they are content merely to bask in the royal sunshine, and live upon flies." When the second bowl of punch was finished, the anti-ministerial man desired to call for another, and offered to pay for it himself; but the question being put to the vote, he was left in the minority, as might be anticipated: so his mouth was shut; and having paid the reckoning, we forthwith quitted the house, directing our steps to Charing Cross; where I took my leave of my companions, rejoicing within myself that I bore no part in the conversation, and that my own affairs had not in any way been brought forward.

About eight o'clock my dear wife returned to me, highly gratified by her visit to the palace. She had dined with Lady Sundon, and her venerable aunt, who had been maid of honour to Queen Anne. The old lady was delighted with her niece's friend; and my Eliza, who always took a peculiar pleasure in being kind and attentive to persons advanced in life, was particularly attentive to her. In the afternoon, her Majesty had desired to see Mrs. Seaward, in a private manner, with Lady Sundon. When she went, the Queen received her affably, laying aside the sovereign for the time, and, with expressions of great interest, listened to all the particulars of our shipwreck, and, subsequent adventures, and improvements on the island. She laughed heartily at my wife's account of the *Battle of the Peccaries*: but a higher feeling manifested itself, when the narrator described my attack on the Spanish Guarda Costa; and the result of the attempt made

by him in his boat. And here, no doubt, my dear wife put forth her best eloquence;—as her feelings were always quite alive to every circumstance of that rencontre — “My brave and generous husband,” was a favourite expression with her when speaking on this subject. “Nobly done!” exclaimed her Majesty; “he shall have the reward of the brave.” As the day began to draw to a close, her Majesty said — “You must come another day, and tell me more; it is altogether a very interesting story:” then taking her by the hand, the Queen added — “I am delighted with your present; it will make me the richest dress in Europe; and I desire you will accept this from me;” — taking a diamond cross from a little case, and fixing it with her own hands to the pearl necklace my wife wore on her neck. There was great dignity as well as delicacy in this act of the Queen. The obligation under which a valuable present might be supposed to place her, was now removed by an equivalent in value; so that every future kindness from her Majesty became a free measure of grace and condescension.

My dear Eliza was deeply affected by this signal graciousness in a queen of England to her, and could not help feeling proud of the attentions she had altogether received at the palace. — “But,” said she to me, after giving way a little to feelings that might readily be excused, “it is God that disposes all hearts! and I must humble myself before Him, lest mine should fall into the snare of vain-glorying in any thing earthly. I could not endure the thought, that He might withdraw His

face from us, my dear Edward." She had detected the condition of her own heart; and desired me to join her to-night in humbling ourselves before the Majesty of Heaven; which I did; and we found that peace in prayer, which our Father and our God never denies to those who seek it with a true and faithful spirit.

Early the next morning, we had a visit from Lady Sundon. After a few minutes' agreeable conversation with my wife, which chiefly turned on the great affability of her Majesty, and the interest she took in our welfare, Lady Sundon told my Eliza, that the Queen would fix an early day to see her again; and that her Majesty requested her to bring the little dog which had fought by her side against the wild beasts. Lady Sundon then turned to me, smiling, and said — "But my visit is to you, Mr. Seaward. I come to save you some unnecessary uneasiness. The Queen will throw aside the grant, when it is brought to her with other papers to sign. Mr. Powis, most likely, will come and tell you this; and, as of course you would feel surprised and uneasy if you did not know how it had happened, I am authorised to tell you, that in a few days after it will be signed by her Majesty, under some particular alteration she intends." I thanked her Ladyship; and said — "I should be most happy to acquiesce in any alteration her Majesty might think fit to make." Lady Sundon smiled sweetly. "I fear, my Lady," resumed I, "you will scarcely be able to pardon the liberty I am about to take; but I throw myself on your kindness; — may I ask, who is

Mr. Powis?" She smiled again, but not as she had smiled a minute ago: in the former smile, a ray of delight seemed to dance in her eye; a sort of quivering now played about the mouth, curling up the angle of the lip. "I believe he is one of Sir Robert's jackals," she replied; "but to do him justice, he is not a mercenary. It is his passion to find out every thing, and to tell every thing: in doing which, he has done incalculable mischiefs; but he entertains the vain hope of serving all parties. Vanity seems to be the mainspring of his actions; he is desirous to be thought somebody; and is never so well pleased, as when he can do a little job for Mr. Paxton, the secretary to the treasury, and bring some grist to their private mill." — "I thank you, my dear madam," I replied; "sometimes I suspected so: but really could not make him out; his friendship for me appeared so perfectly disinterested." — "He is not a bad character," she resumed; "but he is true to the game he has engaged himself to play; I say engaged himself, for he is a volunteer in the business. I suppose he talked to you about getting hold of the right ear of the minister! A paper appeared in *Fog's Journal* some months ago, 'On Ear-tickling, as practised by the Chinese;' — it is whispered he wrote it: but we know better: it is rather a satire on Sir Robert, and was not written by such a man as Powis." — "Well, how incredible!" exclaimed my dear wife; "I could not have suspected such double-dealing in any man." — "Ah! dear Mrs. Seaward," replied our noble visiter, "any base coin of brass, impressed with

the image of Virtue, is allowed to circulate for gold ; and passes current here without much scrutiny."

The conversation having thus finished, her Ladyship left us ; and we talked over what we had heard, wondering as to the alteration the Queen intended to make in the grant, and what the matter meant altogether. It ended, however, in our feeling satisfied that her Majesty intended us no injury ; and, therefore, we dismissed its consideration from our minds, and were at rest on the subject.

On Friday, the 15th, I had a visit from Mr. Powis, who came in with a very long face ; and, after as long a preamble, told me, I had been deceived in the quarter on which I had grounded my expectations ; that after all the trouble Sir Robert had taken, the Queen-Regent had refused to sign the grant, and had thrown the paper aside. I made no reply. " Now, my dear friend," continued he, " if you would have been guided by me, this could not have happened." — " Indeed, I believe so, Mr. Powis," I replied. " Well, then," he resumed, " be wiser in future, and I will put you in the way of rectifying your error." — " I thank you, my good friend," said I ; " but every man, I suppose, has a rule or principle of his own to guide him through life ; and mine says, ' Keep the straight path in all your doings, and leave the result to the Disposer of all things.' " — " Very well," returned he ; " that is the minister ! and if you continue in your folly, you will by and by be unable to get to him by any path at all." — " Thank

you, Mr. Powis," said I again, "for your good advice. But I am not born to shine in Protean wisdom; I will leave the matter where it is." I am sure I could read on his brow — "What an ass that fellow is!" But whether the obstinacy or patience of the animal were meant, I could not in my own mind determine. My dear wife sat by the while, not a little amused with the conversation. Mr. Powis appealed to her. "Ladies know nothing of these matters," she replied. And after a little more vain rhetoric from the confidant of the minister's confidant, he took his leave.

On Tuesday, the 19th, a note came from the palace, saying the Queen desired to see Mrs. Seaward to-morrow morning, attended by the little dog; and wished Captain Seaward to be informed, there would be a levee at St. James's on Friday, and that her Majesty desired him to attend in his uniform, and that Lord Harrington had promised to present him. The note was from Lady Sundon, addressed to my wife; to which a suitable reply was returned, and our wits were now set to work as to what was to be done. Fidele must be washed with scented soap, combed, and not allowed to eat any animal food. My old blue and gold were got out, and put under survey; we thought they might do: they were very good; and, having been worn, we decided that this added somewhat to their respectability. A new hat, however, was to be purchased; and as my knee and shoe-buckles were of silver, they would not suit the present occasion, therefore gold ones must be got; and I determined on having one of the Spanish gold sword-handles, with its lion's head, pro-

perly fitted up with blade and scabbard, and slung with one or more of the massy gold chains, selected from among the articles in the plate chest. No time was lost in putting these matters in forwardness; and I applied to the jeweller from whom I bought my wife's pearls and diamonds, to get the sword mounted in the best mode, telling him the hilt was pure gold. He weighed it before me, and said he would do so again before the workman, to whom he was to intrust the job; and would have it so fitted, that he could take off the hilt and weigh it again when it came back. I approved his caution; and then bought the gold buckles for my shoes and knees. We had encountered heavy expenses in this way of late; but they were not to occur again, and therefore could not injure my fortune: for such expenditures are not like the life-drain of daily high out-goings, occasioned by an overwhelming establishment.

A royal carriage was sent, for my wife on the next morning; she was quite ready. "You are to go too, Fidele," said she: the dear little dog was quite overjoyed at the well-known words of his mistress; and having been washed with violet soap, was quite in trim "to come before a queen." I caught the little fellow up in my arms, that he might not encounter the dirt on the pavement; and taking the hand of his mistress, led her down, and placed them side by side comfortably in the carriage.

In my Eliza's absence, I brushed up the gold lace on my blue suit; then walked out to buy my hat, and went to hurry the business of my sword:

endeavouring to pass away the day as well as I could.

In the evening I had the happiness to see my sweet angel return, and greeted her with a joyous welcome. She told me of all the kindness she had received from the Queen, to whom she had related so much more of our history as she thought might be interesting. Her Majesty took great notice of Fidele, and had the curiosity to look at the scar in his throat, made by the tusk of the peccary. "You should have a pension, brave little fellow," she said. Her Majesty then put several questions to my wife, bearing on the various incidents she had just related; and in her answers, the Queen expressed her hope, "that if we did not find the people grateful, for whose sakes we had taken so much pains, we might nevertheless find them happy; and that, perhaps, was all that any benefactor of mankind ought reasonably to desire." At length my Eliza had permission to retire; her Majesty saying to her at the same time, "Your husband attends the levee on Friday? Lord Harrington will send his carriage for him, and introduce him; and it may be well for you to accompany him, and remain with your friend Lady Sundon until it is over."—"Your Majesty is all graciousness!" replied my dear wife, as she took her leave.

On Thursday there was a great fuss about my ruffles and stock; and it was judged right to have gold lace round the knee-bands of the breeches, and elsewhere, besides a richly embroidered waistcoat; and, in addition, a fine pair of white silk hose, with elegant shoes of Spanish leather, turned up at the

toes. At night the sword came home, and looked quite magnificent : so that now all was in readiness for the trying occasion of the morrow.

I put on my habiliments by good time in the morning, all excepting my wig, which I feared to discompose ; it being finely dressed, looking not unlike a gooseberry bush in a hoar frost. I also girded on my sword ; and walked about, then stood, and then sat, with it hanging by my side, so as to accustom myself to it a little ; lest I should be awkward in the royal presence, and, perhaps, get it between my legs, and tumble down. As the time of my departure drew nigh, I felt my courage fail me ; and the first time in my life, had a qualm of the coward's sickness. My dear wife cheered me, but the palms of my hands continued cold and clammy. At length the carriage was announced. My beloved soul gave me a life-imparting kiss ; and helping me to adjust my peruke, we went hand in hand, with my hat under my arm, to the carriage, entered it, and drove off. I felt my blood beginning to circulate again pretty freely as we passed Charing Cross ; and was quite myself, or perhaps a little flushed, when we alighted at the palace. Lady Sundon took my wife from my hand at a turn of the grand staircase ; when, at the same time, I was introduced to Lord Harrington, who led the way for me to the anteroom. He talked to me about the West Indies and Spanish America ; and with great courtesy, said, he was happy in having been requested to present me. I thanked him for his great kindness in sending his carriage for me, and for the honour he intended me. He then took me

aside, and asked me if I knew the purpose of the Queen, in desiring my attendance at the levee. I replied, it was an honour I had no right to expect; but her Majesty had been graciously pleased to command my attendance, and it would afford me great pleasure to express my gratitude. "There is something more than that," said his Lordship, "or I am mistaken: however, I think it right to tell you, if her Majesty should hold out her hand when you are presented, drop down on your right knee and gently approach her hand with your lips; but do not move from your kneeling position, until she retires a few steps from you; and if she should desire you to do any thing, do it, whatever it may be." Having said this, he took me by the arm, adding—"Now we must go in." There were many of the nobility present, and several officers, naval and military, all of whom formed a sort of half circle; her Majesty being seated when we entered the levee room. After a little, her Majesty rose, and I had the advantage of seeing several officers and others presented; to every one of whom she said a few words. Sir Robert Walpole was there; who, in a short time, recognised his humble servant. He came round, and said something to the noble Baron, my introducer, who answered only by a smile. The minister, however, gave me a gracious nod, and went back to his place. It now came to my turn. His Lordship took me by the hand, and, as we advanced from the circle, the Queen looked steadily at me. She seemed in that moment to be making up her mind, on a person about whom she had lately heard so much. "I

have the honour," said Lord Harrington, "to present to your Majesty, Captain Edward Seaward; who, under a commission from the Governor of Jamaica, commands a small dependency on the Spanish main." — "You are not unknown to us, sir," said the Queen; "I am happy in an opportunity of evincing my satisfaction in what you have done for the service and honour of his Majesty." She held out her hand, and I did as the noble Baron had directed me. In an instant I saw a sword in the hand of my august Mistress: from whom she had taken it, I had not seen; but she laid the blade upon my shoulder with the gentlest grace imaginable, and said — "Rise up, Sir Edward Seaward." There were two persons thunder-struck; Sir Robert Walpole and myself. I was too much absorbed in my own affair to see him; but Lord Harrington told me afterwards, that when her Majesty finished her address to me on being presented, Sir Robert looked round him with evident confusion, to the no small pleasure of some persons present. However, like a true courtier, he lost no time in coming up to me; and giving me his hand, said — "Sir Edward Seaward, I congratulate you on the favour of her Majesty."

The levee being concluded, the noble Baron told me his carriage should wait to take me back to my hotel; but he believed I might not yet return; for he knew from Lady Sundon, that it was the Queen's intention to see Lady Seaward, in her private apartment, after the levee. I am not ashamed to confess, that my heart was expanded by a delightful feeling, when the words "Lady Seaward" fell from the lips

of the noble Lord; yet I hope it arose purely from the pride I always felt in seeing my dear Eliza honoured, and not from any indirect self-elevation, which perhaps the distinction I had just received might be calculated to inspire. Lord Harrington then accompanied me to Lady Sundon's apartments, and introduced me to her venerable aunt; to whom he spoke a few agreeable things, and then wished me good morning. I sat and talked with the old lady about half an hour: she congratulated me on the Queen's favour; and made me still more happy by praising my wife, — saying, I did not know how much they all loved her.

At last my sweet angel appeared, leaning on the arm of her friend; who had been desired by the Queen to bring her into the royal private apartment, immediately after the levee, that her Majesty might have the pleasure of imparting to her the knowledge of what had just been done. As they entered the room where the Queen was, her Majesty advanced towards them, and taking my Eliza by the hand, said, with a beneficent smile — “Lady Seaward, I am happy to see you.” My beloved looked up earnestly, with an enquiring eye, but did not speak. “I have added one more brave knight to our list, a few minutes ago, in the person of your husband; and I have reserved to myself the pleasure of communicating the intelligence to you.” My tender-hearted Eliza was overcome; — being ever alive to the most grateful feelings, even for the smallest kindnesses, she was now overpowered, and sunk at the feet of her Majesty; but collecting herself in a moment, exclaimed — “My honoured husband!

Your Majesty has indeed made me happy, by exalting him." The Queen raised her as she wept; but they were tears of gratitude rather than of joy. Her Majesty's kind nature was conspicuous throughout: she made her sit down beside her, desiring Lady Sundon, at the same time, to give her a little water, which she offered to my Eliza with her own hand; and would not suffer her to depart until her composure was quite restored. At length the Queen pressed her hand with great kindness, and gave her permission to withdraw.

My Eliza, on some occasions, would not be restrained by forms. The moment she came into the room where I was, she flew into my arms; and giving full vent to her feelings, wept unrestrained. The two ladies present understood human nature too well to interfere. In a short time she smiled and kissed me, saying — "Now I am better. — My dear and kind friends, pardon this weakness, and my rudeness." — "Thou child of nature!" replied Lady Sundon; "would to Heaven that all women were like thee!" We did not refuse a glass of Mountain and a bit of cake, which were kindly offered to us; and soon after, we returned to the hotel in Lord Harrington's carriage. On alighting, I felt it incumbent on me to behave handsomely to his Lordship's servants, and I desired them to wait. When I had handed my dear wife up stairs, I sent a guinea each to the two footmen, and a couple of guineas to the coachman. He who took the vail to the servants, brought back the news into the hotel, of what had taken place at the levee; and we were not many minutes without receiving the humble

congratulations of our hostess ; and my dear wife was Ladyship'd before night by every servant that she had occasion to speak to, until she was quite sick of it.

We now made sure of the grant, and saw into the Queen's reason for putting it aside ; no doubt, having had it in contemplation to honour us as she had done ; and that, therefore, it would come to be made out for Sir Edward, instead of Captain Seaward. To make some grateful acknowledgment to our friend Lady Sundon, and to devise some offering of gratitude to her Majesty also, occupied our earliest thoughts. After some deliberation, my wife suggested the probable acceptability of the silver perfume boxes ; — they were large and massy, and richly embossed with Scripture story ; the one representing the Nativity, the other the going down into Egypt : a cow and calf, near the manger where the infant Jesus lay, were well executed ; and the ass, in the going down into Egypt, was a remarkable true copy of nature. It was resolved to have the former richly gilt, in dead and burnished gold, for her Majesty ; and to have the other go through the hands of the silversmith, so as to give it a dead silvery white, on a smoothly refreshed surface, as the subject might require.

The next morning we went to the jeweller, who was a silversmith also, and gave him the necessary directions respecting the cases, and their internal boxes likewise, which were to be made to correspond with the exterior. During the day, the Lord Harrington sent his compliments, and Sir Robert Walpole sent his compliments ; and our dear friend

Lady Sundon, with the old lady, called to pay us their respects. They came in the same carriage my dear wife had been accustomed to go in ;—I therefore seized the opportunity of sending a couple of guineas to each of the footmen, and three guineas to the coachman ; which was not bribery, but reward.

The ladies remained with us all day ; and it was, indeed, one of the happiest days in my life. Lady Sundon was delighted at the issue of the affair, and with the heart her Majesty showed in it throughout ; regaling us with the many agreeable things the Queen said to her on the occasion, with respect to the triumphant manner in which she had carried me through. I told her, Sir Robert had sent his compliments. She said, that was a respect due to the Queen, but that I must return them by a visit. I told her that Lord Harrington had also done me the same honour. “ He is my kinsman,” she replied, “ and will be happy to serve you in any way. If you will accept it,” continued she, “ he will lend you a carriage, on Monday or Tuesday, to pay your visits.” I said I should be much obliged, not having any carriage of my own. We persuaded our kind friends to stay dinner ; and the royal carriage was sent away, to return in the evening. The day sped away on halcyon wing ; the conversation never flagged. Her Majesty — the minister — his jackals — or something connected with our shipwreck and residence on Seaward Islands, — afforded topics in abundance ; all, to us, most agreeable and interesting. My dear wife had put up the two plain gold pieces of tissue, which the tirewoman had ex-

told so highly, into two separate parcels; one of which she directed to "Lady Sundon," and the other to "Lady Mary Wotton," her dear old aunt: she had also given orders to have the parcels placed in the royal carriage, when it should arrive. On parting, Lady Sundon kissed my dear Eliza; who then said to her — "I have ventured to put something into the carriage, for your aunt and for yourself; and if you do not accept it, I shall feel hurt." They then shook hands with us kindly, and took their leave.

On Sunday, we attended divine service at St. Martin's; and felt it our duty, if not altogether our inclination, to dedicate our afternoon to reading the Scriptures. "Ye cannot serve God and mammon;" — we began to feel the truth of this saying of our divine Master. "Let us not, my dear Edward," said my wife, "lose the favour of God, for all this world can bestow." We therefore read the Scriptures till late in the evening; and prayed fervently to God in Christ, for forgiveness of sins, and grace unto future righteousness and holiness of life.

On Monday, the minister's secretary called with the grant, which had been signed by her Majesty, as Regent of the kingdom; and she had ordered the clause to be expunged, which entailed forfeiture on me, in case of my turning such grant in any way to my own profit, by sales of land or otherwise. I read it over, and expressed myself well satisfied. "I will pay you the money down, sir," said I, "and there is no occasion for a receipt; for I perceive the consideration money, 2000*l.*, is expressed in the deed." — "It is so, Sir Edward," he replied. I

then drew out an order on my bankers for the amount, and handed it to him. He sat a while without saying any thing ; but I perceived there was yet something to be done. "Are there any fees, sir, to pay?" I asked. "I am directed, Sir Edward," he replied, "to demand no fees."—"But, sir," I resumed, "you have had some trouble in this business; and I beg you will do me the favour to accept this rouleau of gold;" putting a paper roll, containing 50 guineas, into his hand: "and I desire my best thanks to Sir Robert Walpole, and that you will accept the same." He bowed courteously, and made some complimentary speech, which, like all such, vanished into thin air. When he was gone, my dear wife and myself congratulated each other on having at last obtained the object of our voyage; and we returned thanks to God, who by his power and influence over the minds and actions of his creatures, had accomplished this great matter for us.

On Tuesday, the Lord Harrington sent his carriage for me. I took the opportunity of taking my dear wife to the palace; and after leaving her there, returned his Lordship's compliments by a call, and then drove to the house of the minister. I wished to leave my name and drive away; but it seems I was expected, and the porter had orders to say Sir Robert desired to see me. I accordingly alighted, and was shown into the minister's library, without using gold or silver keys. He arose when I went in, and took me cordially by the hand; complimented me, then joked me; said he had supposed I was a Protestant, and a Whig; but that some others thought

they could prove me to be a Papist, and a Jacobite. I comprehended the allusions, and bearing of all this; and only replied by a smile. "But now, Sir Edward," said he, "to be serious; if you were in parliament, whom would you support?"—"The Crown, unquestionably," I replied. "Then it follows," said he, "that you would support the minister of the Crown."—"So long," I rejoined, "as that minister endeavoured to uphold the dignity and prerogative of the Crown, with constitutional consistency, and by direct and honest means."—"Psha!" said he, "that is the way all novices talk. If," continued he, "a minister could find men as they should be, and not as they are, he could run at his business like a bull; but, my dear young friend," added he, "you do not know what a minister has to contend with." I could not answer him, yet I was not convinced: after a short pause, "I think," rejoined he, "you cannot do better than take a borough: there will be one vacated in a few days; I know you can command it without injury to your fortune, and you owe it to yourself not to reject the opportunity offered; for, without flattery, I venture to say, I perceive you are not wanting in *nous*, and only require a little intercourse with public men, to fit you for any honourable public employment; and I will take my chance of your support, on the grand connecting principle of loyalty." I thanked him, but assured him my mind was made up to return to my transatlantic domain; and there I should be happy to make myself as useful to the King, and to his government, as opportunity might permit. "Are you fixed in your de-

termination?" he said. — I replied, "I am, if with royal permission." — "Well, then," said he, "would you like to hold your appointment from us direct; or, as you have it, from the Governor of Jamaica?" — "That is as you may please, sir," I replied; "I should be sorry to desire any thing that might not be quite proper." — "That is quite proper," he replied; "I will consider of it." The conversation now drew to a close; he shook hands with me, and with a smile, said, "I think I shall call upon you some day or other, to do service for us, among your Spanish neighbours on Terra Firma." I made my bow, and my exit; not a little glad to escape from the wily statesman. I called for my dear wife on my return, and had the pleasure to sit and converse with her friends a few minutes; after which we drove home, conversing on all that had passed between the minister and myself during our late interview.

A gentleman called on me to-day respecting the fees of knighthood: I made a thousand apologies, and really felt ashamed, the matter never having crossed my mind. He said in reply, it was quite time enough; and, at my request, made a list of the items, which amounted to 92*l*. I begged his acceptance of 100*l*., requesting him to make the disbursements for me, and apply the surplus as he might think proper. He received the money quite courteously; and paid me many compliments, by way of change, which I as courteously accepted, and he took his leave.

By the middle of the week, I received a friendly note from Lord Harrington, with an official letter

as secretary of state ; enclosing a commission, signed by the Regent, but differing a little from that which was given me at Jamaica. The present one appointing me Commandant, (the word Captain being omitted,) and Governor of the Islands denominated, &c., with right of admiralty, and power to grant commissions, and appoint courts, agreeable to the jurisprudence of the realm, &c. ; but in matters of general interest, not immediately local, to obey any orders or instructions that from time to time I, or any person holding the supreme situation at the islands for the time being, might receive from the Governor of the Island of Jamaica. " Ah, very well, dear Eliza," said I, " this will do ; I am glad to have this : I was never quite easy under my former commission ; it came in a questionable shape." I lost no time in making my noble friend due acknowledgments and thanks ; for I felt that he had taken this handsome way of putting me in possession of the commission, to save me the fees of office ; as perhaps it was the Queen's wish that no fees should be taken from me for it. The many gracious acts we received at the hands or by command of her Majesty, caused us often to reflect on the mysterious ways of Providence ; by which our elevation in life, and I hope usefulness also, had been brought about. If the King had not been absent, perhaps I should not have succeeded in obtaining the grant. If the Prince of Wales had not lost the confidence of his royal father, the Queen could not have been Regent, but he would have filled that high situation ; and it is most probable, in that case also, I should have been disappointed in the object

we now had so happily attained ; accompanied, too, by so many other marks of royal favour.

In the evening we got letters from Awbury, bearing our new titles on the cover. They were in acknowledgment of a few lines Eliza had written to her reverend and revered father, and to my sisters, just before the post went out, after receiving our unexpected honours. Her father's letter was such as might have been expected from such a man, on such an occasion. "My beloved child, bear your good fortune and your distinction with humility ; that you may receive heavenly gifts also from Him, who is the primary giver of all things." The letter from my dear sisters was in a different strain. "Dear ! how they should have liked to see the Queen !" and so on. — "Well," said my dear wife, "we shall soon be able to go to them now ! and indeed, Edward, I shall be glad when we do so ; for I feel myself becoming more and more attached to our friends at the palace ; and, to own the truth, perhaps I could give up all our old friends at the Island, to remain here, if you were to express the least desire for it ; therefore, my dear husband, let us make haste, for I am not insensible to the charms of this elegant and attaching society." I was not surprised at this declaration ; the condescension and even kindness of the Queen, and the unparalleled courtesies of Lady Sundon to her, were calculated to make a deep impression on the feelings of one possessing so sensible and noble a nature. But I had no such allurements ; I, therefore, felt no difficulty in backing her honest wishes, by assuring her, I would do every thing in my power

to expedite our departure: still, however, I had some things to do for our yet dear little transatlantic home, before I could take my leave of London.

From what I had heard from a certain quarter, there was reason to suspect that a rupture with Spain might not be far distant. The Commissioners, although they had sat three years on the British claims, had not been able to obtain any equivalent redress or satisfaction from the court of Madrid, for the depredations committed on British shipping by the guarda-costas: I therefore was anxious to send out ten guns for the battery I had ordered to be prepared on the open ground below the mansion; as also some field-pieces, or transportable guns, and a few musketoons, to place on swivel stocks in the boats, should they at any time be required. Captain Tracey was drawing near the period of his sailing for Jamaica, so that no time was to be lost; in consequence, I set off to go into the city, to consult my bankers about purchasing this artillery; when, on the way, I met Lord Harrington coming out of Somerset House; and as he condescended to stop and speak to me, I told him what I was going about. "They will cost you a great deal of money," he observed. — "I cannot help that, my lord," I replied; "I wish to be ready if any thing should occur." — "I understand you," he replied, "you are a near neighbour to the dons: but come with me; I think I can procure an order for all these matters from the Ordnance; and that, in your case, is nothing more than right." I thanked him, and returned with him, first to Whitehall, where he said he had something to do; after

which I accompanied him to the Master-General's Office, and the thing was quickly accomplished. I received the order required, and hastened back with it to the city, to give it to Captain Tracey if I could find him, which I did. He was right glad to meet me, having heard of the honour I had received at court, and undertook to take in the ordnance stores immediately, if a lighter were sent with them from Woolwich. I desired him to hire a lighter for the purpose; he took the order, which, beside the guns I have mentioned, included powder, shot, &c. &c., and he promised to see to it, without loss of time.

The next morning very early, Captain Tracey called on me, to say the order would not be complied with, unless I myself went to the Ordnance Office at Woolwich. I lost no time in addressing myself to the business; so requesting my dear wife to accompany me, I sent for a chaise, and we set off, taking Greenwich in our way; where I called on my old acquaintance, Captain James, to take him with me: fortunately, I found him at home, and leaving Lady Seaward with Mrs. James, he posted on with me to Woolwich. The principal officer of the ordnance was remarkably obliging, and not the less so on account of the presence of my friend Captain James. He said the order would have been complied with on its first presentation, but they could not make out exactly the sort of guns required; he meant with respect to their carriages. I confessed the truth of his observation, and told him, the twelve pounders were for a battery *en barbette*. "Then they require high and

traversing carriages," said he. "Well sir," continued he, "as to the field-pieces, they are of brass, and rather valuable; but we have a great many in store, and as the order is only for two, there will be no demur about it. Now, sir," he added, "with reference to the powder and shot, you shall have an order at the Ordnance at Jamaica if you please, and as I understand the stores are to go out in a merchant ship, I recommend this arrangement." I perfectly agreed with him, and he wrote the order. "Now, sir," he resumed, "with respect to the wall pieces, they are all at the Tower,—you want six of them; I will give you a memorandum, by which you shall obtain them, by presenting it there." He asked me if I would like to pick out the guns, and carriages, and field-pieces: for which I thanked him; so he, and Captain James, and myself, went down to the wharfs, and made choice of those we most approved. "Now, sir," said he, "if you will give me a receipt for these things, they shall be sent off in one of the government boats to-morrow morning, and shipped on board the *Phoenix*." I thanked him for his zeal and courteous conduct, and wished to pay any fees that might be required. "We don't know what fees mean here, sir," said he; "we are something like you," continued he, addressing himself to Captain James,—“we are too glad of every opportunity to do our duty, without requiring any perquisites besides our pay.” I shook hands with this upright man, Mr. Forester, and returned with my friend to Greenwich, where we dined.

As there was no time to waste, having to finish

my business in London, I requested permission to proceed, pressing Captain and Mrs. James to spend the day with us to-morrow, and accompany us to the Tower, which they promised; and on our return home, while I went to look after Captain Tracey, my wife wrote a note to invite Mr. and Mrs. Child to meet them at dinner; as we did not wish to go away without paying this sort of civility; and as Tracey, although only master of a West Indiaman, was a very respectable man, I asked him also; and left a note for Mr. Perry in passing.

Captain and Mrs. James came to us soon after breakfast, and we proceeded to the Tower. We saw all the curiosities there, so frequently described, besides three royal cub tigers, just whelped, the first that ever had been English born. After our visit to the wild beasts, I delivered my memorandum to the Lieutenant of the Tower, with whom we immediately went round the armoury; and I picked out half a dozen wall-pieces, bearing the mark of his late majesty. These pieces are precisely like a soldier's musket, carrying a three ounce ball, and fitted with a pivot and crutch, to fix in to the bore of a swivel stock; so that a man can bring the butt of the piece to his shoulder, and take a sight, and fire, without receiving the least kick from the rebound.

I had ordered the best plain dinner that could be served in the English mode, *sans quelques choses* of French cookery; and the best wines also, not however excluding the French. We sat down eight in number, the most comfortable party for a dinner table: we were not graceless, at which,

Mrs. Child stared a little. 'The dinner went off very well, and every one seemed to enjoy themselves; because there was no stiffness on our part, nor ridiculous ceremony beyond that which good breeding requires. The ladies continued a good while with the dessert, and our banker's wife did honour to the wine; she soon became very voluble: "Did not like to sit after dinner—hoped Lady Seaward would soon retire to quadrille—wondered how she could put up with the attendance of none but the servants of the hotel—and certainly expected, by this time, to have seen her fine taste displayed in an elegant and suitable equipage." Old Perry said, dryly, "Sir Edward keeps his stables in the Bank of England;" at which remark, our nautical friend laughed heartily, and my dear Eliza and myself could not help smiling. The ladies at last retired; and after taking some more wine and a bowl of punch, we joined them; but Mrs. Child could not make up a quadrille table among us all; we, however, proposed a sober game of whist, at which she was quite shocked; yet not being able "to exist without dear cards!" she was content to sit down to the old-fashioned alternative; and having made two tables, we all entered the lists; old Perry saying, "Now I like this, it is like old times." By ten o'clock our guests left us, excepting Captain and Mrs. James, who remained in the hotel all night, and spent the next day with us, accompanying us to church.

On Monday I saw Captain Tracey again, and gave him the receipt, to be delivered at the Tower; and a letter to the Master of the Ordnance at Ja-

maica, to take charge of the ammunition ; and also letters for my brother and Captain Drake, and one for Mr. Green, at Kingston. Having done this, and feeling that our business in London was drawing to a close, we congratulated ourselves on the subject, and could not be sufficiently thankful for the happy termination of so arduous, and at one time unpromising, an affair. We now turned our minds to finish whatever remained yet to be done ; and in consequence went to the jeweller, and got the perfume boxes, which had been elegantly completed according to order.

We had occasionally considered the subject of an equipage, so often pressed upon us by Mrs. Child, and sometimes felt that we really ought to have a lackey at least, and my dear wife a waiting-woman. However, as we had all attendance requisite, at the hotel, we had determined to be quite unlike other people, and not have any servants of our own while in London. The subject now bore a different aspect ; — we were going among our friends, and we thought that something was due to the rank and station her Majesty had conferred on us ; and as our stay in England would be short, no great mischief could be done to my fortune, by three months' expenditure, in making such a figure as at least would not disgrace us in public opinion. I therefore determined to purchase a good travelling carriage, to be drove by a postilion ; and, after some debate, we sent for our hostess, and requested her to recommend a valet to me, and a waiting-woman to Lady Seaward. After some little pause, she said, " there was a nice young Frenchwoman, (a relation

of the tirewoman, who was a Parisian,) a good scholar, and a good milliner, and who sung and played the guitar charmingly, that wanted a situation." — "I shall be most happy," returned my wife, "to do any thing to serve your friend, Madame Filibert; send for the young woman, and your friend her relation, this evening, and I will talk to them." — "As for the valet, Sir Edward," resumed our honest hostess, "they are all such a pack of rascals about town, I would not advise you to hire one till you go down into the country." We thanked her for her kind and disinterested counsel, telling her I would profit by it.

We now went out, to seek about among the coachmakers for a travelling carriage. There were carriages enough; but the new ones were without arms or emblazonry, and those that were second-hand bore the arms of other people. We had never thought on this, and could not help saying something about our dilemma. "Well, sir," civilly observed a coachmaker in Long Acre, "I can soon put in your honour's arms; — what are they?" I confess I felt extremely disturbed by the question; for I really did not know. My dear wife relieved me of my embarrassment by saying — "If we take the carriage, we will call on you to-morrow with the escutcheon." He bowed, and I rather hastily withdrew, glad he did not know who I was; indeed, to tell the truth, I was ashamed to go back to him again. However, I lost no time in obtaining the Seaward arms from the Herald's office, for which I paid five guineas; but whether those I got had been manufactured or not for the occasion, I could

not tell : I was, however, well pleased, and so was my dear wife, to see a dolphin for a crest, supported on a knight's helmet ; and as her honourable mind would not sanction any thing like a scurvy trick, she sent for the coachmaker, and desired him to put merely the crest on the carriage, with the motto — “ *Mon Dieu et mon Roy,* ” — and to get it done as soon as possible, as we should leave London, perhaps, by the end of the week.

Madame Filibert, and her niece Rosalie, came according to appointment, and had a long interview with my wife. “ I hope, madam,” said the aunt, “ you will treat her more like a companion than a servant, *comme une petite amie* ; for she is of a good family, although I who say so am her relation. Her father was a Protestant clergyman, of the remnant of the Huguenots ; but he and his brother, my husband, died poor ; and she and I, and my daughters, have sought in your country that protection we could not find in our own.” My dear wife was a good deal affected ; and promised to be a kind friend to her niece, if she should at all merit it, — which she hoped and believed she would. Rosalie appeared modest and intelligent ; possessing a light and agile figure ; and, upon the whole, quite engaging by look and in manner. The terms on which she was to serve being arranged, it was further stipulated, that she should accompany her mistress to the Indies if we required it. My dear wife was not forgetful, in her own mind, that we owed all our present success with the government, to the unconscious tirewoman ; and she therefore was the more disposed to receive her niece on the

most favourable terms ; and, besides, was not indisposed to bestow some solid mark of her regard on the aunt. " Now, Madame Filibert," said my generous Eliza, " Rosalie must come to-morrow, and assist me in packing my things ; and, as a token of my esteem for the aunt, and as a pledge of the kind treatment her niece may expect from me, I request that you, madam, will accept this small present ;" giving her, at the same time, five guineas. This unusual act of generosity surprised the good woman not a little ; who returned a thousand *remerciments* to her Ladyship.

Early next morning, I gave a helping hand to my Eliza, to wrap the embossed perfume cases in two coverings of silver-paper, with the most delicate directions we could devise placed between the first and second coverings. Soon after we had finished, Rosalie made her appearance ; and she and her mistress set to work packing. I selected a few articles, out of our gold and silver repository, to take with us ; and having the box containing the remainder, then put into a hackney coach, I drove to Lombard-street, and deposited the contents at my bankers, in the iron chest. On my return, I found that Lady Sundon had just left the hotel ; — she staid but a short time with Lady Seaward, seeing that she was busy : she, however, made her promise to dine at the palace on Thursday, and to bring me as her page. While expressing her regret that we were so soon to part, this amiable woman put a valuable and beautiful ring on my Eliza's finger, saying — " Keep this for my sake ; and when you are gone, be sure to write to me some-

times." I was much pleased with this fresh testimony of Lady Sundon's affection for her, whose honour was my greatest delight.

On Thursday we had the pleasure of dining with her Ladyship, and her venerable aunt. After our dinner, my dear wife had a short interview with the Queen; who, in the kindest manner, asked if every thing had been done to my satisfaction; assuring my Eliza, at the same time, that it would afford her satisfaction, at any future period to show us favour or protection, if we should require it. "Before I part with you, my dear Lady Seaward," continued her Majesty, "I wish to give you something, which I think you will value more than gold or jewels. When I passed through the Hague, many years ago, I met Saurin; — I was then on my way to England. He gave me this excellent sermon, which is written in French by his own hand: I desire you to accept it, and sometimes to read it, in remembrance of me, and of the pious minister of Huguenot descent who wrote it; — he was an excellent man! At my request, he wrote a book for the use of one who has not profited by it as he ought; but in God I trust." The Queen paused a second, then resumed. — "I believe, Lady Seaward, that you are one of the few who give glory and honour to God, for whatever good awaits you in life; and for this reason I lay aside the Queen when alone with you; and I confess to you, that when I met M. Saurin at the Hague, I told him I was grateful to the Disposer of crowns for that which I was about to wear; and I feel happy, my dear young friend, in this opportunity of laying open my heart to one I

believe worthy of knowing, that Caroline of England's proudest title, would be that of a true Christian woman." My Eliza thanked her Majesty with a silent tear of gratitude; and, kissing the hand that was held out to her with the book, courtesied and retired.

Before we parted from our kind friends in the evening, my dear wife took occasion to ask Lady Sundon as to the Queen's allusion, when speaking of M. Saurin, and the little book that had been written by him at her command. "Ah!" replied her Ladyship; "the Prince of Wales; it was written for him; but he has not profited much by it. God only knows what can induce him to act as he does; especially to his royal mother; who is both kind and just, and would lay down her life for his true interest and happiness: but he has bad people about him. I don't like that Lord Bolingbroke," continued Lady Sundon, lowering her voice; "and now I will tell you a secret. These bad people, by their intrigues, have contrived to throw a firebrand in among us, which has lighted up a consuming fire in every royal breast, and has broke confidence which formerly was undoubted. Her Majesty has been informed that Sir Robert is in secret correspondence with the Prince; and the information comes from a quarter that she may not doubt. Her Majesty has taxed him with it, — to which his answers have been rather equivocal: in consequence, she is much displeased with him, and takes every opportunity of showing it. This state of things vexes her the more, as, till then, she had entertained a favourable opinion of the minister. —

But, moreover, he has contrived to send his brother to Hanover with the King, instead of Lord Harrington, to do the business of secretary of state there; and they manage it so now, that the Duke of Newcastle does every thing here; so that nothing is known but at Claremont or Haughton. Dear Lord Harrington is, in point of fact, pushed by this cabal into the back-ground; although they dare not take from him his office: and what is all this, as regards Lord Harrington, but some spiteful proceeding, on account of his straight-forward undeviating principles. But the Queen knows his worth, and cannot be biassed; and the King ought to know it too, by this time,—for he has been a faithful servant to the Crown for many years. But for the present, at any rate, the Walpoles have managed to poison the mind of his Majesty against him; so that he is not permitted to take much upon him in public affairs: but our gracious Queen, nevertheless, seizes every occasion to show him favour and respect.” My dear Eliza, unwittingly, had touched her friend on a tender point; by which much more was elicited than intended. We were truly sorry at what we heard, although it contained information of some importance to myself to know: but my dear wife thought only of what kind and soothing things she could say to her friend, that might induce her to hope eventually for such a termination to this deplorable affair, as the wise providence of God would, in his own good time, bring about. Then, after taking a somewhat melancholy leave of our kind friends, we returned to the hotel.

By the end of the week, all our accounts were

paid, our things packed, and every arrangement completed, including the carriage; and, on summing up all my expenditure, I found I should get out of London for 3120*l.*; taking in the amount paid for the grant, my purchases, and other expenses: but as such occasions were not likely to recur again, these disbursements, although heavy, gave me no sort of compunction or uneasiness. On Saturday all was ready; but, however anxious we might be to depart, not liking the idea of travelling on the Sabbath, we remained that day, and went to St. Paul's.

CHAP. VII.

ON Monday morning, the 8th of November, I sent off our heavy trunks to Bristol by the carrier. I then paid Mrs. Osborne's bill very cheerfully, not forgetting the servants; and with two small trunks and a band-box placed in the fore-boot of the carriage; and Rosalie, and our faithful little dog, and the two embossed cases, inside, we drove off with four horses, calling at the palace in our way, to take leave of our kind and dear friends. Lady Sundon saw me from a window hand my wife out, and she met us on the staircase: we were followed by Rosalie with the cases, who kept as close to us as she could, until we went into the inner apartments. The interview there, though short, was sufficiently demonstrative of the feeling that existed on both sides. "Edward," said my dear wife, "will you have the kindness to bring in those things?" I instantly obeyed. She then took the one from my hand that was intended for the Queen, saying — "My dear Lady Sundon, implore Her Majesty to accept this, in remembrance of her most devoted servant." And then reaching the other — "Now, this is for yourself, my best friend! and you must not refuse it as a sweet token of my regard, for it contains Indian perfumes. You will not be jealous of our royal mistress," continued she, "when you find hers

more splendid than that I give to you." — "I cannot imagine what they are," replied her Ladyship, smiling kindly; "but believe me, my dear friend, whatever it is, I accept it for your sake! and however sweet the Indian perfume may be, its coming from your hand will make it doubly so. And I am sure Her Majesty will not refuse your other sweet offering; for as you have my heart, I am confident you have hers also." Saying this, her Ladyship kissed my wife most affectionately; tears stood in their eyes; and for fear of playing the woman too, I suddenly caught hold of Lady Sundon's hand, and pressing it gently, faltered out — "Farewell!" and made my escape, leaving Rosalie to conduct her mistress down the first flight of steps, where I waited to receive her. Lady Sundon stood a little above, with many a tender parting word upon her lips; thus was our last farewell! We then hurried down to the carriage, got in, and drove off by St. James's Street for Oxford, on our route for Gloucestershire.

The roads were excessively heavy and full of ruts, so that although we had four horses all the way, it was as much as we could accomplish to get into Oxford by bedtime, being much embarrassed by the darkness of the evening.

Although we were anxious to embrace our much loved friends, yet it would have been unpardonable to lose this present opportunity of seeing the renowned University of Oxford; and accordingly we spent the whole of Tuesday visiting the different colleges and the Bodleian Library, leaving Rosalie at the inn to keep Fidele company;

he, poor dog ! like some other famed travellers, having no great stomach for books. — We were much gratified by all we saw, and made some notes of it, to enable us to call up again to our recollection more distinctly, the one and the other of these celebrated nurseries of genius and learning.

Early on Wednesday morning, we drove forward to Woodstock ; and after breakfast paid a visit to Blenheim. The noble founder of the house of Marlborough was no more, but his Duchess was still living. We admired the grandeur of this superb place, worthy of the object for which it was designed : but our chief pleasure arose from visiting the tapestry rooms, not however on account of the tapestry, for however curious and worthy it may be in point of the subject and fabric, and brightness of the colours, yet the limning is altogether so wretched, that it is impossible to dwell on any of the pieces with delight ; but the fine paintings of Carlo Dolce, and many other great artists, charmed us to the soul ; although untutored in estimating the character or value of pictures, we felt as if we could have remained for ever gazing on them. The person who went through the rooms with us, named the painters as he described the pictures ; but he did it with indistinct rapidity, hurrying us unpleasantly along. My dear wife seemed particularly distressed by his haste, when she was rapturously engaged in contemplating a picture of a Madonna, whose hand appeared to stand out from the canvass in all the roundness of perfect life : seeing this, I touched

him on the shoulder, and taking him aside, slipped a guinea into his hand. — "Give us a little time, my good friend," I said. — "As much as her Ladyship pleases," he replied; so we then stood to admire whatever we thought worthy of admiration, and proceeded leisurely. At length we came to the library, built much on the scale of Noah's ark: there was a fine statue of Queen Anne, in Parian marble, at one end, by an Italian artist, which we much commended. And having put my name down in a book on entering the mansion, we had nothing more to do on going away than to give some money to the servants; and not having time to visit the noble grounds, we returned to our carriage, and drove off on our route for Gloucester.

The roads and inns were abominable all the way, and the horses and tackling bad as could be, after we discharged the postilions who brought us from Woodstock, sometimes finding it difficult to get the second pair. We thought to take a late dinner at the village of Cheltenham; but things promised so miserably, that I ordered horses to be put to, with flambeaux-men, and drove on to Gloucester. We were comfortably lodged there, and had a good dinner or supper, or whatever else you please to call it, about six o'clock.

Next morning we felt rather stiff, and thought a bath would refresh us; but the weather was too cold for any thing but a warm bath, and there was no such thing to be had; so we made a virtue of necessity, and left the stiffness to wear off as it came; and as I had said to my Eliza's father, in my last letter, that we should be with him a little

after the noontide of this day, I hurried breakfast, and took care to have four good horses, with decent-looking fellows for postilions; and about nine o'clock we set off in great spirits for our native village, after an absence of a little more than three years.

As we drew nearer and nearer to the cradle of our childhood years, object crowded on object, claiming our recollections and regard. At length we saw the church through the leafless trees; our hearts then rebounded with joy: the parsonage-house next appeared, and dear Mr. Goldsmith standing before the door. "Sit on this side, dearest Eliza!" said I, hastily, "that you may be next to your father, when the carriage-door is opened." She quickly took the place, and the postilions pulled up; one of them dismounted like lightning, opened the door, and drew down the steps: he had scarcely got out of the way, when my beloved was in her father's arms, but not one word from either. I saw my three sisters in the back ground; and Eliza's two remaining sisters clinging to their father and his darling child. The old gentleman, supported by his children, gradually drew towards their house-door; when my own sisters then came up to the carriage, from which I was descending, and received me with a like tenderness of affection. We followed into the house, where I embraced my only earthly father, with all the warmth of feeling, his own worth, and the worth of his incomparable daughter, inspired. Fidele did not wait for Rosalie; he had sprung out after his mistress; and now that higher emotions were softening

down, the caresses of the faithful little dog were not unnoticed ; every one had something to say to him ; he seemed to know every body and every thing, jumping and dancing about as if he would leap out of his skin. " This is a happy day for us, dear Fidele ! " said my Eliza ; still holding the hand of her father.

The things were taken out of the carriage, the postilions paid, and desired to leave it at Thornbury, to be taken care of there until I might want it. Poor Rosalie had been much moved by the scene she witnessed, for we saw her in tears. One object had touched her closely ; it was the father of Eliza, who reminded her of her own.

During the first week of our sojourn, nothing was talked of but our eventful history ; my sisters being particularly interested about James, and the sisters of Eliza equally so in every thing connected with Amelia : for although they had all received letters long since our departure from Seaward Islands, yet the minutiae, the curious minutiae, of their situation and prospects, were objects of amusement as well as of anxious enquiry. Dear Mr. Goldsmith hung over our own story with a never tiring avidity ; every now and then blessing God for his providential care of us, and for the grace he had vouchsafed to put into our hearts. We told our good father, privately, every thing that had taken place in London ; but beyond him, we did not think it prudent to make any disclosures. And we, moreover, confided to him the secret of our wealth, and all that had passed in our minds respecting it ; telling him, that he was the only person in the

world, besides ourselves, that knew it ; which assertion, even he, considered scarcely credible, until by repeated conversations, he was made acquainted with the cautious manner in which the business had been conducted throughout. The girls asked a multitude of questions about the Queen ; but no answer seemed to satisfy them, how it came about that Eliza should be made her Ladyship. All they said, only caused a smile on her part : she was still the simple-hearted, single-minded daughter of the curate of Awbury.

One day my Eliza showed them the diamond cross, appended to the pearl necklace ; and told them, Her Majesty gave it to her, and fastened it with her own hand. That appeared quite like a fairy tale, that the Queen of England would condescend to do such a thing : she might, indeed, give the diamond cross ! But they wanted to know for whose sake, and for what reason, all this was done. " My father has already told you," replied my sweet angel, " that the Queen thought my brave husband deserved the honour of knighthood ; and she conferred it on him, and thus, through his honour I am honoured, and have the title of Lady Seaward : all else was grace on the part of Her Majesty, if she chose to be kind to me." — " Dear girls !" I exclaimed, " the Queen loves your sister with an affectionate friendship ; and, perhaps, the truth is, that I rather owe to her what she says she owes to me — all our honours !" The old gentlemen could not dissemble his exultation, and delight, at this my declaration.

On Sunday, we had the supreme felicity of wor-

shipping our God in the temple of our fathers; where every tender recollection was awakened, softening the heart, and exalting our devotional spirit. Many were the greetings we received in the churchyard, and on the way. It was gladdening to meet again our old school-fellows and friends; and to be caressed by the aged, who had been kind to us in our youth. Some of the gentry bowed to us; and some said, they would do themselves the honour of calling on us. Fame had magnified our riches; and the circumstance of having received a title, confirmed in the minds of many the most exaggerated reports. Early in the week, some of the most wealthy and respected of the country gentry, called to pay their respects. These compliments we in due time returned; but refused all invitations to dinner, visiting and carousing not being our objects; yet we were not of an unsocial turn, but it was, that we aimed at higher pleasures.

The heavy trunks and packages at length arrived from Bristol, and we now began to consider what was to be done during our stay at Awbury. My dear wife, as well as myself, had always been attached to arrangement, and liked to lay out her time to advantage. We had talked over the possibility of learning the French language from Rosalie, and books had been purchased in London for the purpose; they were now arrived, and Rosalie's guitar was come also. The days were short, to be sure, and cold, and the mornings dark: but, although these considerations affected out of door business, we had the same number of avail-

able hours within as at midsummer ; therefore due portions of time were allotted to study, and the rest to business, and to the society of our dear friends, or an occasional visiter. Thus, our days became fully occupied, yet finding time to write long letters to my brother James and to Captain Drake ; and soon after our arrival, I sent a very kind letter to my uncle at Bristol, promising to see him very shortly. My wife fulfilled her promise to Lady Sundon, and received the most agreeable reply ; in which she transmitted a gracious message from Her Majesty. In this way the rapid week finished in the blissful day of rest, when we again met in the holy place of our childhood, hearing the word of God from the lips of our much-loved pastor. Not seldom we went to see my sisters, who occupied a neat small house in the village, but they more frequently came to us. Still, however, as the season was unfavourable to excursions beyond the threshold, much of our time was dedicated to reading, and more especially to the study of the French language under Rosalie, whose education had by no means been neglected. In this way our weekly hours were spent ; but on Sunday, the 5th of December, we had the divine privilege of receiving the blessed sacrament of the Lord's supper : a rite which both my dear Eliza and myself had anxiously desired ; and if any thing could have added to its welcome, it was that we received it from the hands of her venerable parent.

On Tuesday, letters were received from my brother James, with the pleasing intelligence that

his wife had brought him a son. This was a subject of great joy, especially among the ladies ; but there was one little omission which somewhat marred the perfection of their ecstasy ; he had not said what the child was to be called ! In his letter to me, he stated that matters were going on well : several Spaniards had visited the islands, and one Dutchman from Curaçoa ; and that he had turned the dollar pretty often to great advantage. He added, there had been some sickness, but no deaths ; that they were much alarmed at one time for fear of the smallpox, it having been in one of the Spanish schooners ; and he thought I ought to send a doctor to the settlement, for, in truth, he had been very uneasy on his wife's account, as there was no medical man at hand if required. He described the people as orderly and industrious ; and spoke of my friend Drake in the highest terms ; adding, that they all hoped soon to see us again, and that the mansion would be quite ready for our reception ; and that three more houses had been built at Soldiers' Town, to complete the six allotments there, to be in readiness for any accession of settlers. This was all well, and it afforded great satisfaction to my dear Eliza and to myself.

We thought James right in advising a doctor to be added to the colony ; but during our own abiding there we had not seen sickness in any shape, therefore the idea had never entered our mind. I, however, now lost no time in directing my attention to the subject, and had many conversations both with my dear wife and her father respecting

it : in one of which it was further suggested by the old gentleman, that if I thought a clergyman could be supported by any means whatever, I certainly ought not to let the colony remain longer without one, when it could be remedied ; for the bread of life to the people, should not hang on the contingency of my presence, or the disposition of any one I might leave to manage for me in my absence. His argument was conclusive as to the propriety of the measure. I, therefore, told him it should be done, leaving the ways and means for future consideration. The good old man said, he could not desert his flock, or he would be happy indeed in going with us himself ; but he would make enquiry, and had no doubt he should soon find a proper person. “ He must be married,” said I : “ we shall find no difficulty in feeding his family. Marriage is our charter at Seaward Islands. They are all married, or to be married ; and I think they are all nearly mated, except my friend Captain Drake ; and I intend my own sister, Maria, for him, if they should like each other ! And we must have our doctor a married man too.” My dear Eliza smiled. — “ Observe,” said she to her father, “ how ardent he is ! This is ever the way with him ; he never makes difficulties. Now I know him so well, that I can promise you houses will be built, and grounds laid out, and every comfortable arrangement made for the reception of the gentlemen and their families, before they reach the settlement. But, indeed, I have seen him, poor fellow ! almost at his wits end to locate the people comfortably, when they came unexpectedly in a shoal upon

him; negroes, and artificers, and soldiers, and their wives and children! he, however, did it.—“Yes, my Edward,” continued she—“you did it; and you did it well, as you do every thing.” From her this was no flattery, because she spoke the real sentiments of her heart. How far I deserved such a eulogium, is another question: but it was pleasing to her to bestow it, and to me to receive it, and to her dear old father to hear it; and Good Nature too, if of the party, could not but be pleased also.

We had made up our minds to pay the promised visit to my uncle at Bristol, by the end of the week; and as I knew he would not suffer us to hide ourselves, some of our fine things were packed up for the occasion. Then having advertised him of our coming, we took Rosalie with us; and having ordered four horses to the carriage, we set off in a manner according with our station in life, and reached his door a little before noon. He was at home to receive us, and he did it quite in his old way. “Glad to see thee, Ned! dang it, thee’s too fine; well, never mind, if all’s right within.”—I smiled, and shook him cordially by the hand.—“How is my aunt, sir,” said I: the old lady was not far off. “The better to see you, my dear nephew; and you, my dear girl,” she exclaimed, meeting us in the passage, loading us both with kisses, and hearty welcomes. Rosalie remained without, to see the things taken in; but my uncle insisted on doing that himself. “I beg you will walk in, ma’am,” said he.—“Not if you please, sere,” replied the girl. The old gentleman did not

quite understand what she meant by "not if you please, sere;" and besides, he did not clearly comprehend who she was, being very well dressed; so he came back to us, and taking me by the uppermost button, whispered—"What is the matter with your wife's friend?—Is she huffed about any thing? She won't come in; I asked her, and she said, "Not if you please, sere:" what does she mean by that?"—I had much ado to keep my gravity. "Let her see to the getting out her mistress's things, sir," said I; "she is her waiting woman."—"The d—l she is," he replied; "a French waiting woman, I suppose: well, she is a pretty maid, French or English; she shan't stand there; call her in Lissey," cried he to my wife, "and I will see to your things, and pay the post-boys, and order the carriage to the Tolzey."—"Thank you, sir," I made reply; "manage the matter just as you please." Rosalie was called in; and my uncle was right glad at my having given him his own way. The old lady now asked us ten thousand questions, almost altogether; and among others, whether I had brought her any curiosities? She, in conclusion, thanked her niece for the silver tissue sent by Captain Taylor; then begged to be excused that she might see to the dinner, now ready. I was glad to find that no one had been invited to meet us to-day; but on her return, being about one minute a head of the first dish, my aunt gave me to understand, that the Mayor, and one of the Sheriffs, with some other company, were to dine with my uncle to-morrow, to do honour to his nephew; and then I should see something like a dinner.

The old gentleman began his jokes, before the cloth was removed : — “ Why didst not bring thy French cook with thee, Ned ? I suppose thee hast a French cook, as thy lady has a French waiting maid. He would have knocked up some kick-shaws, for our feast to-morrow.” A smile was my only answer to my uncle’s wit. Then he had at me about my money, and the galleon, at which I laughed heartily : but my Eliza, not much liking the jest, took the liberty of setting him right on that point. He, however, made several attempts to find out what I was worth, but I always baffled him. I must confess, nevertheless, that I did not myself quite relish his strain of odd humour, so long continued ; and I became in consequence quite disposed to make my visit as short as possible.

Next morning, after breakfast, my dear wife and myself went out to purchase some things, and draw for some money. On our way through the passage, we met a man carrying a couple of ugly-looking dogs in his arms. “ What are you going to do with those dogs ? ” said I. — “ We’ve borrowed ’em from the neighbours,” he replied, “ to give our dog a bit of a help to turn the spit here to day.” I could not help laughing ; but Eliza thought the thing so strange, she wished to know more of the matter. We therefore turned back, and followed the man into the kitchen ; when, at my wife’s request, the cook put my uncle’s turnspit into the wheel, where he immediately fell to work like a squirrel in a cage, doing the business that a smoke-jack does in London, or weights and pulleys in

other places. Her curiosity being satisfied we retired, and went forth on our projected errands.

On our return, we dressed for dinner in plain suits. A little before two o'clock, the Mayor arrived; and soon after him, Mr. Sheriff Elton. I really now felt uneasy as to my uncle's usual behaviour, fearing how he might conduct himself towards me on this occasion; for although I am not fond of state or ceremony, yet there is a certain respectful behaviour, at least before strangers, which should not be withheld even from junior relations; especially where adventitious circumstances have raised them in society. The old gentleman, however, to my great relief, behaved remarkably well. He had put on a laced waistcoat, and a new full-bottomed wig; and, perhaps, if he were not very scrupulous of respect for me in his own mind, he felt that he owed something to his waistcoat and to his wig. "Mr. Mayor," said he, "I have the honour to introduce my nephew, Sir Edward Seaward." After a few words from the Mayor to myself and a reply, my uncle with great propriety took his worship to the end of the room, where my wife was sitting, and introduced him to Lady Seaward. He then went through the same ceremony with the Sheriff, and six other gentlemen whom he had invited to meet us. Precisely at two o'clock the dinner was on the table, which must have been upborne by the shoulders of Atlas, to support the weight of all that was put thereon. When I contemplated the sirloin of beef, and all the other roasts, I thought on the poor dogs we had met in the passage. The Mayor sat on my aunt's right

hand, and my wife took post next to him. I was on the opposite side, next to the Sheriff; the gentlemen now sitting below, forced me into this situation. The Mayor, I perceived, was a gentleman of high breeding; and evidently knew much of the world, and something of books: he talked a good deal with Lady Seaward, on subjects by no means common-place; and I heard him say, that the Mayoress would do herself the honour of calling on Her Ladyship to-morrow; and he hoped they should have the pleasure of seeing us at their house, before we quitted Bristol. My aunt left the table soon after dinner, and my wife accompanied her. The old gentleman then passed the wine very freely, for a couple of hours; about which time, two enormous bowls of punch were put on the table, which were generally resorted to; but I drank nothing but red Bourdeaux wine, and thus, if I did not contrive to keep my tongue quiet, I kept my head cool; while all around me not only gave noisy, but other evidence of the potency of their beverage. The Mayor often said he would like some tea, and desired to retire to the ladies; but my uncle would not allow him to budge; and by way of consoling him I suppose, about six o'clock Welsh rabbits were brought in, and a great cider cup handed round. Most of the company partook of this treat, but I would not touch it. About nine o'clock we broke up; when I was very glad to ask my aunt for some coffee, and soon after retire to rest.

In the morning the family was ready for church, my uncle not feeling at all the worse for his mighty dose the day before; but, on the contrary, seemed

much more agreeable, now giving a truce to his jokes; so that we had a good deal of rational conversation in the interval of church time. After supper, I endeavoured to give him some idea of the condition of the people and trade at Seaward Islands; and I took this opportunity of telling him I wished to send a respectable medical man there, who would be made comfortable; but nothing beyond that could be held out to him. He said, he "knew an ass of a fellow—a Scotchman too—who had been two or three voyages to the coast of Guinea, in a ship belonging to a friend of his; but who would not go there again, on account of what he considered as cruelties practised on the slaves; although he and his wife were next thing to starving, for he had no other business nor dependance."—"He is the very man for me," I replied, "if he can show testimonials of education."—"Didn't I tell you he is a Scotsman?" exclaimed, my uncle; "should not that be enough?"—"Not quite, sir," I replied; "but, in my mind, it is something in his favour."—"Thee art an apt scholar, Ned!" said he, drily; "how many lessons didst have from the minister? Mayhap, he took thee for a Scotsman! They say he finds them the best of servants."—"You would be a little severe, uncle," I replied; "but we pray you mercy, good sir." He felt himself now on an eminence, and laughed heartily at his imaginary triumph over his nephew and Sir Robert Walpole.

On Monday, I lost no time in sending a note to Mr. Gordon, the Scotch doctor; stating, in part, my reason for requesting him to call on me. He

very soon acknowledged my note in person; when I entered more at large with him on the subject: he was rather silent the while, and cautious in his answers, but occasionally putting to me a material question. After an hour's discussion, he said he would consult his wife, and consider of it, and would be glad to talk to me again about it; that it was altogether, as far as he could see, "an out o' the way business; but he might engage in it, if I could let him see his way clear."

In the course of the day, Mrs. Blackwell and Mrs. Elton, the wives of the Mayor and Sheriff, called; which visit my aunt and wife returned in due course; and an invitation to a dinner at the Mayor's, on Friday, followed.

On Wednesday, Mr. Gordon waited on me again, and I was glad to see him. He appeared disposed to accept the situation; but he thought 50*l.* a year a small salary in the West Indies: and as to the accommodations of which I talked, that might or might not be, just as it happened; "he would like to have them specified."—"Mr. Gordon," said I, "it is your misfortune to take great pains, in the present case, to misapply the good rule of *hard but honest dealing*: if you will throw yourself on my generosity, you shall have no reason to repent it."—"That may be true enough, Sir Edward Seaward," he replied; "but the teaching I have had, tells me not to trust to the generosity of any man." I said, "I was sorry to hear this;" adding, "I should like for your wife to wait on Lady Seaward, and perhaps they may succeed better than we do in settling it:" at which he smiled, saying, "he could

not see much objection to that." He then got up to go away; on which I asked him, whether he had proper testimonials of his medical education. "Sir," he replied, "I have got my diploma in my pocket;" on which I bowed, and he took his leave. In the course of the afternoon, Mrs. Gordon came: she appeared a nice little Englishwoman, and rather well spoken, and genteel in her manner. I left her and my wife together, to settle this unnecessarily troublesome business; and they were closeted for nearly two hours. When she was gone, my dear Eliza recounted to me the heads of the conversation. Suffice it to say, she had succeeded in making the Doctor's wife desirous of going on my own terms; and the following day was appointed for putting a finish to the business.

While at supper, we were all much distressed by an account that just reached us, of a vessel from Chepstow for Bristol, with nearly a hundred passengers, having got on the sands last night; all of whom, excepting a few that escaped in the boat, had perished; and many of those lost were said to be people of Bristol, some leaving large families destitute. My kind-hearted uncle immediately said, — "While the story is fresh, it will be easy to raise some money for the afflicted survivors, and I will see to it to-morrow." My dear wife and myself felt deeply on the occasion; and I desired him, in the event of a subscription being got up, to put my name down for any sum he pleased, not exceeding the chief magistrate's donation whatever that might be.

Mr. Gordon and his wife came to their ap-

pointed time. "Now," said I, "Mr. Gordon, my uncle's brig will sail about Christmas, which is very near at hand; I will pay your passage, and your wife's, and take care that you have comfortable stores found you during the voyage. On your arrival at Seaward Islands, you shall be received into my brother's house, where you will live as he does, free of expense, until a fit habitation be got ready for you: it will consist of a dining hall, and two bedrooms: and some little land attached; and this you shall possess free of rent, so long as you remain practising your profession among us. I will advance you money to furnish your house: you shall have a male and female negro for your servants, so long as you behave well to them—which I flatter myself you will always do; and for their services no charge will be made, excepting that they must be fed and clothed at your expense. I will stock your poultry-yard and your grounds, at my own charge; and I will pay you a salary of 50*l.* a year, for your attendance on all the people; the medicines to be found at the public expense, or at mine. Will this do, Mr. Gordon?" continued I. "It will do very well indeed, sir," he replied, "but a written agreement is no bad *ca-tioner*; and I suppose you will make no objection to give it me under your hand."—"My word is my bond, sir," said I, rather warmly; "but you shall have it in writing, as you desire it." My dear wife fired at the request of Mr. Gordon: she thought he had no right to require it; that his having done so, implied a distrust, which was highly insulting; besides, many of the offers made

to him were purely gratuitous, therefore should not be altered in their nature, by turning them into an absolute matter of bargain. I saw the force of her argument, and began to think that this man's prudence, by running into the extreme, had assumed a vicious and rather troublesome aspect. After taking a turn or two in the room, I said to him—"I think we must break off this negotiation, Mr. Gordon; your mind and mine were not cast in the same mould: I fear I could not respect you, and hence I could not make you happy at the settlement; therefore I break it off." So saying, I bowed to the pair, and quitted the room, leaving them with my wife, to end it in any way she might think proper.

After I was gone, Lady Seaward spoke to him rather sharply on the suspicion he seemed to entertain of my integrity; adding—"I fear Mr. Gordon, you must have met with very bad people, in your intercourse with the world, to be so suspicious."—"I canna say but I have," he replied; "I was two years in a Guineaman." His wife now set on the poor man without mercy, venting her spleen on him in no very measured terms. He took it all very quietly, saying at last to his wife—"I'll do any thing you like; but there's neither sin nor shame in a man's desire to do business in a business-like way; and for this cause, I am reproached by you, and Sir Edward Seaward, and his lady here. I did not ask his name to a paper," continued he, "because I doubted him; so I'll now do just any thing you like, wife."—"Well, then," she replied, "explain yourself to Sir Edward, when you see

him, and ask him to look over your folly, and give you the situation ; for let me tell you," added she, " there are many much better off than we are, that would be glad to jump at it." Thus finished this interview of Mr. Gordon and his wife with Lady Seaward ; and they then took their leave, the Doctor having left rather a dubious impression on her mind respecting him. He, however, wrote a note to me the next morning, which was meant as an apology for what had passed ; requesting I would blot it from my memory, and give him the situation on my own terms. In reply to this, I desired him to call on me with his diploma, and that the business should be done : accordingly he came without loss of time, and the affair was concluded.

This day being Friday, we were engaged to dine at the Mayor's ; and thought it due to the occasion, to put on our full dress. My poor aunt, not accustomed to go out to dinner parties, consulted Eliza about her finery : there was one thing the old lady much wanted, and that was a handsome necklace and earrings. " Now, my dear aunt," said Eliza, " when I was going to be married, my uncle sent me 100*l*. which was very acceptable ; and which you, my kind aunt, assisted me to lay out to the best advantage. Now, that it has pleased God to give us plenty of money, I wish to return the 100*l*. in some way or other ; but I know, if I were to offer it in money to my uncle, it would affront him : therefore, let us go, and lay it out in diamond earrings, and a handsome necklace for yourself ; and when you have put them on, you can thank him for his

elegant present." My good aunt required little more to be said ; thinking her niece as sensible as she was generous and honest : and while the old lady was getting ready, Eliza came to me, and told me what she had done. I was glad of it, and immediately gave her a draft on London for the money. They went out; and I thought they never would come back : my uncle got out of all patience, for fear we should keep the Mayor waiting dinner. At last they made their appearance. My dear wife soon dressed herself, and sent Rosalie to assist in doing the same to my aunt ; who, however, did not make quite so much haste. We of the masculine gender were fully attired long before the ladies, or, at least, before my aunt was ready ; and were in waiting for them below. My poor uncle, not being able to sit quiet one minute, had been walking constantly up and down the room, looking at his watch every now and then ; and sometimes going to the bottom of the stairs, he would bawl out — " Dorothy, we shall be too late ! " till at length, fidgeted into fatigue, or despair, he sat down in his arm chair, and began a stave of " George Riddler's oven." At last her quick footstep was heard on the stairs, which set him on his feet ; and he began to chuckle and smile, just as she sailed into the room with all the airs and graces that the consciousness of fine apparel is said to bestow on the peacock. " Thank you, deary, for your elegant present ! " she exclaimed, pointing to her diamond earrings and necklace. " Very grand indeed," he replied ; " I suppose your niece lent you those fine kickshaws." — " No

sir, my niece did not lend them to me, but bought them for me with your money; for which I am very much obliged to her and to you." — "Nonsense!" he ejaculated, with a querulous tone. "Come away, Dorothy, we shall lose our dinner!" so giving a truce to parley, we stepped into a hired coach, my own carriage not being large enough, and drove direct to his Worship's house.

In about an hour after our arrival, we sat down to a superb dinner, surrounded by a company equally well chosen, and sumptuously dressed. I had the pleasure to sit next to General Grenfield's lady, who had been at Jamaica. She said, she was enchanted with Lady Seaward, with whom she had conversed before dinner; and wished much to cultivate her acquaintance: and as we were about to return to the West Indies, she would be happy to give her letters to an old schoolfellow of hers, Miss Crawford, who, by this time, she had reason to believe, was Mrs. Trelawny. My wife sat next to the General, who was on the right hand of the Mayoress; and I was happy to observe the great attention she received from him, and every one near to her. The day went off uncommonly well: we did not sit many hours after the ladies; but, as soon as the grace-cup went round, retired to the drawing-room, where there was tea and cards. Here I had a good deal of conversation with General Grenfield: we talked much of Jamaica and the conduct of the Spaniards. He was both curious and minute in his enquiries about Seaward Islands: he thought, in the event of a Spanish war, they might be made a valuable *point d'appui*, from

which the enemy could be greatly distressed. He said, "in the event of a war, he suspected I should have more visitors than would be agreeable to me; that when the importance of the position was understood, it would be a bone of contention." We took leave of the Mayor and his lady about ten o'clock, well pleased with our entertainment; and equally so with the company, among whom I made some agreeable and well informed acquaintance.

On Saturday morning I entered upon arrangements with my uncle, about sending Mr. Gordon and his wife out in the *Mary* to the islands; and, by my request, Captain Taylor was invited to dinner, that I might talk that matter and some others over with him. In the course of the day, General and Mrs. Grenfield called; and they were much disappointed when we told them we must leave Bristol on Tuesday: however, we promised to visit them on our return, previous to embarking for the West Indies. Captain Taylor came to dinner, as I had requested; which afforded me the opportunity I so much desired, of talking to him on our transatlantic matters. He made no objection to his passengers; agreeing to take them for 25*l.* each, and find them in comfortable provisions. He was to carry out a considerable investment for my brother in merchandise, to be shipped by my uncle, with which I had nothing to do. But we settled a list of such things as I should want for my own establishment, and to dispense to others; which my uncle undertook to get, and Captain Taylor promised to take charge of. Among these

were bedsteads and mattresses, and table and culinary necessities, for the doctor and parson.

On Sunday we attended divine worship at the Cathedral; and in the course of the day visited the fine equestrian statue of King William, which had just been set up in Queen Square, executed by Mr. Rysbrack.

I sent for Mr. Gordon on Monday morning, and told him the vessel would sail in a week or thereabouts; and desired him to order a medicine-chest to be fitted up to the amount of 20*l.*, to be marked with my name; the bill to be sent in to my uncle. "And now, sir," said I, "would a small advance of money be of use to you?" He replied — "I shall hae much need o' that;" adding, that he owed some money in Bristol, and could not go away without paying it. "If it is a fair question, Mr. Gordon, how much may you owe?" — "Perhaps, sir," he answered, "about 50*s.*, or 3*l.* at most." — "Well," I resumed, "you can have that sum; but you will want some more." — "I dinna see that, Sir Edward," he replied; "you say we are to be found in necessities." — "That is very true," I rejoined; "but you may want some light clothing for yourself or for your wife; besides some additional shoes, perhaps, and many other matters: would you like to take 10*l.*?" — "I am not sure how that should be," he replied. — "Let Mrs. Gordon, then, call by-and-by," said I: "she and Lady Seaward shall talk the business over; and whatever money she may think well to have in advance, you, I suppose, will not object to it?" — "Just that," was his answer. And just

thus we settled it; and I saw him no more till I met him again at St. George's Island. He, however, soon sent his wife to us, who understood better than he did what they might require, especially after having had some conversation with Lady Seaward; when it was fixed that they should have 25*l.*, which were paid over to her, and for which I took her receipt.

We contrived, in the course of the day, to return General and Mrs. Grenfield's visit, when that lady gave us the promised letter; and afterwards to make a call at the Mayor's. Having now arranged every thing with my uncle on matters of business, and given him a draft on London for 250*l.*, which was calculated to cover the amount of the supplies to be sent on my account by the Mary, and also the amount of passage-money for the Doctor and his wife, we prepared for our departure next morning.

Breakfast being over, the carriage came to the door; the trunks then being placed, and the other things got in, we took an affectionate leave of our hospitable friends. Feeling that I had forgiven my uncle for his rough and rather rude jokes, I presented him with a gold snuff-box as I shook him by the hand; with which mark of my regard he evidently was highly pleased; and after a few more good-b'ye's, Rosalie having got in first by the desire of her mistress, we quickly followed, and our positions drove off with as much speed as several obstructing carts and sledges would permit.

On our arrival at Awbury, I found a packet under cover of a secretary of state's frank: there

was a letter in it for me, and a note for my wife. The former, from the under secretary of state, by command of his Grace the Duke of Newcastle; the latter, from the Queen. After I had read my letter, I laid it down, saying — “Here is something for me to do, indeed!” — “You will not hesitate to do it, I know,” said my dear Eliza; “the Queen has written to me about it:” then opening her Majesty’s note again, she read a few lines of it aloud — ‘They are my country people; I am sure you will use your influence with your husband to comply with the request of government, and that you will be kind to them for my sake.’ — “Indeed I will,” exclaimed my wife; “and I am sure you will be so too, my honoured husband!” — “What is it?” said Mr. Goldsmith. — “Some German families,” I replied, “that came over to England to go to Georgia; but who arrived too late to go out with a body of people just sailed for that colony. And you will perceive by the official letter, that I am requested ‘to take them out, and locate them at Seaward Islands.’” My father-in-law read the letter; and could not help observing, that it was rather strange the request was not qualified by some intimation as to the manner of their transport from England, at least. “That is what struck me,” I replied. “Well, never mind that,” said Eliza; “let us reply to these letters immediately; assenting to the request in the handsomest manner. You can then state, that if government will convey the families to Jamaica, you will have a vessel there ready to take them to Seaward Islands; and that you only have

to regret your being obliged to give any trouble whatever, in a business confided to you."—"Well, dearest," returned I, "it shall be done as you say: but you perceive there are twelve families; in all, nearly forty persons; and unless government makes some provision for them, I must be at the expense of feeding them all for at least six months after their arrival, besides the cost of locating them."—"Do it, my dear Edward," she replied; "without counting the cost, do it; because they are wanderers without a home, and because they are the country people of the Queen, and the heart of your wife is with them." Her appeal moved me to tears; I threw myself on her neck, saying—"It is done!" The old gentleman was much affected by what had passed; and he gloried in the triumph of his daughter and humanity, over cold calculating policy.

No time was lost in replying to these letters. My letter to the under secretary of state was written agreeable to my Eliza's suggestion; adding, that I should be happy to know when I might expect to find the people at Jamaica: and that in case of their arriving a few days before the vessel from Seaward Islands, I would advise their being landed at Port Royal, and lodged in the artillery barracks, to be allowed army rations until I could remove them; after which they should incur no further expense on the government. My dear wife was pleased with my letter; the perusal of which, she said, would enable her to write to the Queen in a proper frame of mind. She then sat down, and soon wrote her reply. It was an ad-

mirable letter for the occasion. I preserve the copy of it with great care. I was surprised to see with what ease she did a thing which, to most people, would have been an undertaking of great difficulty.

Copy. — “ May it please your Majesty to accept the grateful thanks of her most devoted servant, whom she has just honoured with fresh proofs of confidence and esteem. The task your Majesty has confided to me, shall be performed with assiduity and tenderness; I will watch over the necessities of your country people with all the care your own royal feelings would suggest; and it will be my happiness to think, that in so doing, I am but the proxy of your Majesty. Recommending my dear husband and myself to your Majesty’s esteem,

“ I have the honour to be, Madam,

“ Your most grateful and dutiful servant,

“ ELIZA SEAWARD.

“ *Awbury, Gloucestershire,*

“ *Dec. 22. 1736.*”

Such was the letter, which the Queen afterwards showed to Sir Robert Walpole; and, I know, accompanied by an expression worth repeating; — “ Sir Robert, somebody said, or it has been said for them, that women have neither head nor heart. I think here is a proof of both.” — “ No one could be guilty of such heresy,” replied the minister, “ in an age when your Majesty is so splendid an example of the contrary.” — “ Then they belie you, good sir,” returned the Queen. “ My friends say some good

things for me, may it please your Majesty; and when my enemies undertake to say bad things for me, which they often do, I then should be happy if it might not please your Majesty." The Queen, I am told, could not help laughing; and the conversation took the turn originally intended.

The letters were sealed, and sent off under cover to the Duke of Newcastle, from whose office they had been forwarded.

During dinner, my dear wife and myself had a great deal of deep conversation about locating the German families, and also respecting establishments for the clergyman and for the doctor: in all which Mr. Goldsmith took great delight; and, to enable him the better to comprehend the subject, I laid a map of the islands before him in the afternoon—to which he referred frequently during our discussion. I took this opportunity of telling him I had engaged a medical man; who, with his wife, were to go out immediately in my uncle's brig: but that I proposed taking the clergyman with myself; so that there would be plenty of time to find a suitable person. "And now," said I, "to-morrow I must occupy myself in writing long letters, ordering arrangements to be made for the reception of all the strangers; and I humbly implore the direction of God, to enable me to do it well."—"I like that spirit," said the old gentleman: "depend upon it, Edward," continued he, "that is the fountain of all your honours, and your happiness."

Next morning I set to work upon my letters, which I wrote very much at length;—one to my brother, one to Captain Drake, and one to Mr.

Green, at Jamaica; in which I endeavoured to embrace every point that the intended movements might require. I requested my brother to entertain Doctor Gordon in his house, until one could be got ready for him; and, as the doctor was sent out by James's own particular desire, I thought he of course would not hesitate to give him this hospitality. I directed four acres of ground to be cleared for him, between Allwood's lots and the spring on Edward's Island; and a house to be built for him there, on the original plan of our mansion at the Fort. I called it the Fort; for I hoped, by the time he got my letter, the guns sent from Woolwich would be mounted. I desired Mr. Green to provide frame-work and shingles for two houses, and whatever else Captain Drake might require, on my account. I entrusted Drake with the Germans, when they might arrive; desiring them to be located along the west side of St. George's Island, upon the best land, divided into suitable lots; and to provide them with a four-oared boat; and to bring a supply of yams, and Indian corn, and molasses, with him from Jamaica, for their use, when he came to convey them to the islands. I now wrote to my uncle, to send out by Taylor ten barrels of Irish beef, and as many of pork, together with forty bags of bread, on my account: and my letters being finished, I sealed them and sent them off, under cover to my uncle, with others from the family, for James and his wife, — congratulatory, no doubt, on the birth of their son and heir: and this being accomplished, I was glad to give a truce for a while to business.

CHAP. VIII.

THE present week was to be full of the sacred season's festivities, with great doings amongst the gentry. The little boys and girls of the neighbourhood were already going about in the evenings, singing their Christmas carols at the doors of the village. Saturday would be Christmas-day, and all hearts were joyous in its anticipation. At different times I had conferred with Eliza's father, on some mode of helping the poor of our native place; but as yet we had not come to any precise determination: it was, however, agreed, that the present season would afford a fit occasion of demonstrating my kindly feelings towards them. Accordingly, he made a list of the poor cottagers and others; for whom bread, and bacon, and beer, were now amply provided by my order, and served out to them by the beadle: a trifle in money, also, was added to the boon, by the hand of their worthy curate. Our young damsels kept the parsonage in a bustle, making mince-pie meat and plum puddings: my sisters were to keep Christmas at the parsonage; and a couple of old gentlemen farmers, friends of the family, were invited to the dinner.

When the day arrived, the church looked quite a garden, dressed in its holly; and we were happy to see again that well-remembered commemoration

of the Nativity. On our return, the *yule log* was on, and the table laid : a hearty dinner was soon served up ; and great justice quickly done to the roast beef, and plum pudding, and mince pies. In the evening, Rosalie favoured us with some pretty French and English songs, accompanied by her guitar ; and my dear Eliza sung ; and the merriment went round. Then came St. George and his train, desiring admittance : they were dressed in the most grotesque manner. One boy was St. George, another was his horse, another the dragon ; then came his 'squire, and a doctor, and so forth. St. George mounted his horse, and attacked the dragon nobly ; but the beast wounded him, and unhorsed him ; on which the doctor takes the elixir from his pocket, saying —

“ Here, take the spirit of elecampane ;
Rise up, St. George, and fight again.”

In a moment he is restored — he mounts — the dragon falls, and is dragged off in triumph. The valiant knight, with Membrino's helmet (the barber's basin of the village, borrowed for the occasion), quickly returned to us for our favours ; into which some sixpences were thrown, besides halfpence, as a reward for the performance. After supper, we drank punch, and our young gentlewomen played at snap-dragon. This dragon vomited fire fiercely ; but the ladies held him as cheap as St. George had done, when encountering him in another shape ; nevertheless, they were obliged to have recourse to some latent charm in their own tongue, — applied, by licking their fingers, after every snatch at the

raisins; for they were lodged in the fiery jaws of the blue burning dragon. Thus finished the festivities of our Christmas-day at Awbury; happy in seeing every one around us happy.

Sunday followed; a holy day rather than a holiday: but both days were holy: the first commemorative of His coming, to win for us that Rest of which the second is the type on earth, and into which He on that day entered, to prepare a place for those who love him.

On the following morning, my good father-in-law and myself had some conversation on a subject mentioned by Mr. Giles, one of the old gentlemen that dined with us on Christmas-day. He had said, that Colonel Tomlinson's estate was to be sold by auction at Gloucester, some time next month, to pay off a gambling debt he had got into at Bath. I stated to Mr. Goldsmith, that I was anxious to invest some of my money in land; for the funds, at present, did not give more than three per cent.; and I felt confident we must soon have a Spanish war, and that then they would fall low enough. In consequence, we set an enquiry on foot, and found the rumour to be true; for in a few days handbills were sent about, announcing the day of sale, at the Booth-hall in Gloucester. We lost no time in visiting the property, which lay about seven miles from Awbury; and I took our two farmer friends with us, to explore it, — which investigation occupied us nearly three days, and then they made up their minds as to what it was worth. The land, generally speaking, was found to be good; but the

mansion rather mean, and the grounds round it in miserable condition.

On the 14th of January, the day of the sale, my dear Eliza, and her father, and myself, went to Gloucester; and leaving her at the King's Head, we walked over to the Booth-hall. A plan of the estate was there exhibited: it contained 1750 acres. As soon as the company collected, the rent-roll, in which the leases, rates, tithes, &c. were stated, was then read: after which, the auctioneer declared ten per cent. must be paid down, as deposit money, by the purchaser; and that a good and satisfactory title would be given, before the payment of the whole money was required. The estate was then put up, and the bidding soon became very brisk. I did not bid till it got up to 20,000*l.*; I then bid 500*l.* more. No one seemed disposed to go further; but a stranger coming in, ran it up to 23,500*l.* I then bid another 500*l.*; on which it was knocked down to me. "It is yours, sir," said the auctioneer: "your name, if you please?" — "Sir Edward Seaward," I replied. On giving my name, there was a considerable buzz in the room; and the eyes of the company, generally, were turned on the purchaser. In a second or two I heard a person, not very far from me, say — "Who is this Sir Edward Seaward?" — "Why, haven't you heard that he was a post-boy, or cow-boy, or farmer's boy, or something like, at Thornbury?" replied a red-faced squire, that made one of three who were discussing the point. Without saying a word to dear Mr. Goldsmith, I instantly stepped across the room, beginning to speak as I advanced. — "Gentlemen, I beg

leave to inform you, that I never was either a post-boy, or a cow-boy, or a farmer's boy, at Thornbury, or any where else ; but I was the son of a poor but honest farmer at Awbury, and now, by the blessing of God, I am what I am : but I should disgrace my father, were I ashamed of what I was." As I spoke, you might have heard a pin drop ; and when I had concluded, several gentlemen introduced themselves to me, desiring the honour of my acquaintance ; among whom, a worthy Baronet stood forward, observing, that he could not sufficiently respect me for the manly way in which I had come forward on the present occasion.

The auctioneer now asked for his deposit-money ; which I paid by a draft on my banker. This being done, we went to an attorney in Gloucester, well known to my father-in-law. I desired this gentleman, to see the business properly settled ; and told him, when the deeds were complete, and myself put in possession, the money should be forthwith paid down. Highly pleased with all I had done, we returned to our dear Eliza, and told her that I had purchased Hartland estate. Dinner was soon put on the table ; which to us was very acceptable, after the fatigue of an anxiety inseparable from so momentous an undertaking. After dinner I wrote to Perry and Co., advising them that I had drawn for 2400*l.*, being deposit-money for an estate I had just purchased ; and that in a week or ten days I should have occasion to draw for 24,000*l.*, less the deposit-money ; and to enable them to meet my draft, I desired them to sell 20,000*l.* stock. When my letter was finished and despatched, the day was

pretty nigh shut in, so we determined to postpone our return until the morrow: we therefore drew comfortably round the fire, and ordered a bowl of punch; enjoying the evening in delightful conversation — a happy trio — loving and beloved.

Previous to our departure on the following day, we visited the Cathedral, for the purpose of seeing what, Mr. Goldsmith stated, could not be seen elsewhere; the three successive styles of English architecture, comprised within the walls of one building. He seized the opportunity of explaining this perplexing subject to us, by the examples which stood before us. Here was the more ancient, clumsy, Saxon arch, and pillar; there the equally solid Norman shaft, with its arch equally solid and semi-circular; but being ornamented with the zigzag and roses, declared it to be the production of a later era. The great body of the church, somewhat distinct from the rest, displayed fascies of small and beautiful shafts, supporting elliptical arches towering and hanging as it were in the air. This, he said, was the last effort of monastic genius in cathedral architecture. The day being cold, and our visit being rather short, this is all I can remember; excepting that we saw a fine recumbent statue, or effigy, of the unfortunate King Edward, who was murdered in Berkeley Castle about four hundred years ago, and whose body is reported to lie buried beneath this well executed marble.

We returned to Awbury to a late dinner; where my sisters were invited to meet me. They were highly delighted with the information they received of my having bought Hartland; and I added to their

happiness, by imparting to them an arrangement made last evening, round the inn's fireside, respecting themselves. "As soon as I get possession," said I, "you three shall go, with Eliza and myself, to inhabit Hartland House. And as all the furniture is to be left, excepting plate, glass, china, and linen, there will not be a great deal to do, to render it tolerably comfortable. About the middle of April, we intend to return to Seaward Islands; and it is our wish, dear Maria," continued I, addressing myself to my youngest sister, "to take you from your sisters, and that you accompany us, leaving Grace and Anne to take care of the house in our absence. And when we return, we will live all together; unless some of us be otherwise disposed of; or my elder sisters shall have a house to themselves, with a comfortable income as long as they live." Maria was delighted at the idea of going with us; and the others were equally so with their home prospects. The morrow was the sabbath, which to us is always a day of peace and holy joy.

Thursday brought letters from Messrs. Perry and Co., with an account of the sale of my South Sea stock; and most satisfactory it was: the great rise in the fund being quite unexpected, having reached 111; so that the 20,000*l.* stock fetched 22,200*l.* money.

But I received a private letter also from Mr. Perry, congratulating himself and me on the handsome sum I had realised by the sale; not less than 5000*l.*: and he would now most strenuously advise me to sell the whole of it, since it had got

up so high ; for notwithstanding the defeat ministers had met with in the last session of parliament, in their attempt to pay this stock off, it might not always be the case : and he therefore would advise me to purchase East India shares, which were now at 176, but which bore an interest of six per cent. ; a most advantageous transfer. My remaining 49,532*l.* three per cents., say at 110, would purchase 30,956*l.* in India shares ; the interest in the threes on my remaining sum being 1485*l.* per annum ; whereas in the India shares, under existing relative prices, it would be 1854*l.* I lost no time in replying to Mr. Perry's most friendly letter ; requesting him, without delay, to sell all my three per cent. stock, and purchase East India shares as he had suggested ; thanking him for the great services his zeal and his intelligence had already rendered me.

On Monday, the 24th, we heard of the narrow escape of the King in attempting to cross the Channel, and of the great alarm of her Majesty on the occasion ; but that he had now safely arrived, and that congratulatory addresses were pouring in from all quarters : and my dear wife also felt it her duty to write a congratulatory letter, through Lady Sundon, to the Queen ; which, not many days after, her Majesty most graciously acknowledged with her own hand ; taking the same opportunity of thanking her " dear little friend," for her " inestimable letter respecting the poor Germans."

On the following day, Mr. Wilson, my attorney, accompanied by the attorney of Colonel Tomlinson, called on me with the title-deeds of Hartland ; which were duly executed, perfect, and satisfac-

tory. My good father-in-law ordered dinner early ; and, in the mean time, I showed the gentlemen of the law my banker's account, to assure them there were funds. I then drew out the bill for 21,600*l.*, and put it in my pocket. The carriage and horses were sent for ; and after taking a hasty dinner, my Eliza and her father stepped into it ; the two attorneys being in a post-chaise. We all went over to Hartland ; where I was put in possession before three witnesses, and the deeds delivered. I then paid over my draft on London, to the Colonel's attorney ; and the business being thus finished, we returned to Awbury.

Nextday, the Colonel's steward and all the tenants waited on me at the parsonage ; which made a great bustle in the village. I received them with proper civility, but postponed entering on business of any kind. I told the tenantry, I would appoint a day for seeing them at Hartland House ; but declined the offer of the steward's services, saying, I should have no occasion for them. He said, " A good steward was a necessary and useful person ; he knew how to make the most of the estate ; and never objected to advance half a year's rent to his employer, if required." I told him, I gave him all the credit he desired ; but neither of the points he had put forward could be of the smallest importance to me ; and that I had made up my mind.

There were no inmates in Hartland House, but the gardener and his wife, whom I had told I should retain. And I then desired the wife to hire a couple of women ; and get in a load of coals, and some soap, and make fires in every room in the

house, and scour it down from the garrets to the kitchen; as we should come over, to reside, on Monday next. I wrote to my uncle without delay, informing him of my purchase; at the same time requesting him to hire a footman for me; and to give my wife's dear love to her aunt, wishing to have a good cook and two housemaids from Bristol. The servants arrived on Saturday morning, with a congratulatory letter from the old gentleman. They were immediately despatched to Hartland, accompanied by my two elder sisters, and a pannier of provisions; my sisters being requested to remain, and see that every thing was put in order for us: and to give them more time, we deferred our coming till Tuesday; making use of the intermediate days, to order from Bristol such articles as would be required for housekeeping. By Tuesday, the supplies were procured and sent over; and after dining with our good father, my dear Eliza, with Rosalie and Fidele, drove over to our new abode. They had made the place very clean; and we were much gratified by the improved aspect in which we now behold it. A few days ago it was all gloom and filth; now it was all cheerfulness and cleanliness. The fires were bright; and the servants were about, and smiling. The tea-things were on the table, and the candles ready to be lighted; and my two sisters right glad some to see us, and to see us so well pleased with our reception.

In the course of the week, we made ourselves quite comfortable in our new home; and I wrote to Bristol, to job a couple of horses, and a coachman

to ride postilion, for three months ; which was about the time I had allowed myself to remain in England. Liveries were got for the men, and every thing arranged "*comme il faut*," as Rosalie had taught us to express it. On the first Sunday after our removal, which was the 6th of February, we brought back with us my dear sister Maria, whom we had left at the parsonage ; and on the following day Eliza's sisters, and their worthy father, came over and spent the day with us. I prevailed on him, during this visit, to undertake the stewardship of the property ; and we agreed on an outline of conduct to be pursued towards the tenantry ; and, in making a new let, to take the price of wheat for our guide, now 4s. the bushel. I appointed the tenants to meet him and me at the house on Thursday ; when all points were explained to the general satisfaction : one of which was, that I intended to build twelve small cottages, with three acres of land attached to each, in suitable situations, for poor industrious families ; and if I wanted a bit of land from any of my tenants, to accomplish any part of that plan, I expected it would not be refused on equitable terms.

The grounds and the garden belonging to the great house, were altogether in a most ruinous state ; I therefore hired a couple of men to assist the gardener, and I had the pleasure to see great progress made in putting them in order. By the middle of the month, we were quite settled, and every thing going on like clockwork : for my dear Eliza, as well as myself, was a great admirer of order, and method, and circumstantial arrangement ; which is

the great secret of good and successful management.

It was not long before we received visits from all the first people in the neighbourhood ; and as it was no secret that my wife corresponded with the Queen, Lord and Lady Berkeley did not think us unworthy of their attention. We duly returned all the visits paid to us ; but, from prudential motives, and our love of domestic quiet, we uniformly refused all invitations to dinner.

On the 26th I had a letter from the under secretary of state, to say, that the Germans had sailed in a storeship for Jamaica, and that they would be lodged at Port Royal, agreeably to my suggestion, until one of my vessels could remove them to Seaward Islands ; also, that her Majesty had ordered them to receive a suit of new clothing each, on their arrival at Jamaica, and 40s. in money on embarking for their ultimate destination : and he was commanded to thank me, in the name of the King, for the handsome manner in which I had complied with the request of government respecting them. I was glad to receive this intimation ; and, indeed, much pleased with the whole tenour of the communication, — at once so gratifying and flattering.

A letter from Mr. Perry announced that he had made a transfer of the stock, as proposed, and that it would turn out a very good thing. In reply to this letter, after thanking him, I requested him to open the iron chest, and put aside the gold sword handles, and eight of the gold chains, the four silver salvers, the two beakers, and the candlesticks ;

and then to sell all the rest by weight to a goldsmith, and lay out the amount in elegant modern silver plate; or as much of the money as might be required to purchase the articles enumerated in a list made out by Lady Seaward, herewith transmitted; and to send the new plate, together with the Spanish things set apart, all properly packed in the iron chest, by waggon, directed to Mr. William Seaward, merchant, Bristol.

During the time of our being at Hartland, my dear wife and myself held many anxious conferences on the subject of Seaward Islands; taking into our consideration every place, and person, and circumstance, at different times: but since the arrival of the secretary of state's letter, we had made our discussions quite a matter of business; and I now sat down to write the result of our deliberations by the March packet; bearing on my former instructions to my brother James and to Captain Drake, with some important additions calculated to insure the future comfort of the settlers, especially of the Germans: and I desired that the schooner might be in waiting for me at Kingston, on the second week in June; and to take in there, as quickly as possible, the things I had ordered, and be in readiness to sail when I might arrive.

The month of March passed away, without any thing important occurring; during which we kept very much at home, — devoting ourselves to books, and the study of the French language; my dear Eliza amusing herself sometimes in arranging her beautiful shells, while I visited the gardener and his men at their work: so that our time passed

pleasantly, and I had the satisfaction to see that the grounds and the garden would be left in very good order for my sisters. Some young wall-fruit, and other trees, were put into the ground early in the month; and I had the advantage of standing by, while the gardener performed the operation of budding, on others. This I treasured up in my memory, for the purpose of propagating any good sorts of shaddocks or oranges that might appear among the various sowings at the islands. Sometimes we took a drive, to recreate my Eliza and myself; and sometimes my sisters took their ride, while we remained at home.

About the end of the month I received the iron chest, which had been sent to the care of my uncle, as directed. Besides the gold articles, and pieces of old Spanish plate, it contained two tankards, six pairs of silver candlesticks, one very large and two smaller waiters, two bread-baskets, four small waiters, two coffee-pots, two tea-pots, two sugar-basins, two cream-ewers, with a considerable number of table and tea spoons, and silver-handled knives and forks, two soup-ladles, four gravy-spoons, two punch-ladles, with a doubloon as a bottom to each as had been directed, eight salt-cellars, two mustard-pots, eight butter-boats, sugar and pepper boxes, salt-spoons, sugar-tongs, and some other trifling articles; the whole of which cost 657*l.*, being not quite one half of what the gold and silver articles sold for. Mr. Perry sent me the particulars of the sale, which amounted to 1342*l.*; so that after paying for the plate, it left a balance to my credit of 685*l.*

The ladies soon decorated the side-board, and the tea-table was made resplendent with silver equipage. I was called upon the next day, when our good father-in-law dined with us, to let one of the splendid tankards go round ; and after dinner, the King of Spain's head was seen smiling from the bottom of the punch bowl.

I was so well pleased with Mr. Perry, when I considered the many essential services he had rendered me, and the quiet way in which he had performed them, that I wrote to the silversmith who had made my things, and sent him four doubloons, desiring him to make two richly embossed silver tankards, of the value of 100*l.*, and put a doubloon on the cover, and one in the front, of each ; and to engrave on the bottom — “A small tribute of esteem, from Sir Edward Seaward to Thomas Perry, Esquire, 1737 ;” and to send them, when done, to that gentleman, with my respects. My dear wife highly approved of this act of gratitude, which his excellent conduct and eminent services amply deserved. About the middle of April I received a letter from Mr. Perry, acknowledging the receipt of the tankards ; which, he said, he should value for the sake of the donor : but that I had taken care those who might come after him should value them for their own sake, for they were really superb. I got a banker's bill from Bristol for the 100*l.*, which I enclosed to Mr. Harding, that the order for the payment might not be presented at Mr. Perry's bank.

It was on the 14th of April I sent the bank bill from Bristol ; my dear wife, with my sister Maria,

having accompanied me there, to order some suitable clothing for ourselves, together with low-heeled boots and shoes, and some new articles of furniture; besides an outfit of glass, and china, and crockery-ware, damask linen, and cutlery, grocery, and some other articles we might require at our transatlantic home; to be packed, and in readiness for our departure. I then engaged the whole cabin and state rooms of the *Hero*, for 800*l.*; and after passing rather a busy week, in which we contrived to dine one day with General Grenfield, we returned to Hartland.

My dear Mr. Goldsmith had been indefatigable in his enquiries for a clergyman to go out with us; and at last he met with a married gentleman, having two children, girls; one three, and the other five years old. He had been recommended to go to a warm climate, on account of delicate lungs; which, for some time, had prevented his performing the arduous duties of a curate: but his finances were too low to enable him to profit by the advice; he therefore eagerly caught at our proposal; and so glad was he to go with us, that he insisted on not accepting any stipend whatever,—at least, not until after we should see how his health might turn out, after his arrival. My good father-in-law introduced the Rev. Mr. Rowley and his family to us, on Sunday, the 17th, a few days after our return from Bristol. I liked his appearance and his manner; which, being much subdued, either by religion or want of health, stamped on him that air of meekness which seems the distinctive mark of a true Christian. My dear wife was much pleased with

Mrs. Rowley and her engaging children, and we requested them to take up their abode with us, until we all should leave Gloucestershire together, to embark for the West Indies; which we had reason to believe would take place in about ten days. They, however, remained at the parsonage all night, and in the morning our carriage was sent for them, to take up their residence with us.

In talking to Mr. Rowley one day about our dear little islands, I made some allusion to the Germans lately gone out to Jamaica in a government store-ship, on their way to find a settlement and a home among us. "How came it to pass," said he, "that those people were sent to the West Indies at all?"—"They were to have gone to Georgia," I replied; "but having missed their passage, the Queen placed them under the protection of Lady Seaward. They are sent out before us: and I hope they shall have little reason to regret the event; especially as they will now have the advantage of your ministry, in addition to what we may be able to do for them. But this reminds me," continued I, "of having heard a good deal in London, from a Mr. Powis, about a reverend gentleman lately set out to where they were to have gone:—I think his name is Wesley. In speaking of him, Mr. Powis called him a crack-brained enthusiast; relating a number of strange things he had done and said; and that, to complete all, he had gone out to Georgia, to convert the Indians. But this Mr. Powis hinted, that Mr. Wesley had secret expectations of being ultimately made bishop of the province. Do you know any thing of him?"—"I remember," said

Mr. Rowley, "to have seen Mr. John Wesley, when at Oxford about seven years ago; his conduct and opinions there, certainly occasioned some conversation, and discussion among the men; but I knew very little of him personally: I think, however, it is likely he will be highly useful in Georgia; for, whatever his peculiar views of doctrine may be, his piety is unimpeachable. I never can forget," continued he, "an expression of Mr. Gerard, the Bishop's chaplain, respecting him, when George Lascelles was launching out against the curator of the Holy Club. 'Whatever eccentricities John Wesley may have,' said the chaplain, 'I mistake much if he will not one day be standard-bearer of the cross, whether in his own country or beyond the seas.' Now, Sir Edward," continued Mr. Rowley, "I take Mr. Gerard to have had as good a light in this matter as the Jesuit Le Jay, when he said to his pupil, Voltaire, "Young man, the day will arrive when you shall be the standard-bearer of Infidelity." This prophecy of Le Jay is fulfilled, I think; and I firmly believe so will be that of Gerard. Le Jay saw in his pupil the most unrestrained scepticism and impiety—Gerard observed in Wesley a holy zeal burning within him, then restrained, but ready to burst into a flame."

The time of our departure was now drawing nigh, so that I thought it quite time to come to final arrangements with my kind and worthy father-in-law, with respect to the management of my affairs at home; and he came over to Hartland for the purpose. "Now, my dear friend," said I, "you will promise to comply with all I desire you to do."

He said, "I will." — "Then," I resumed, "you are to receive the rents of the estate half yearly; out of which half-yearly rents you are to pay my sisters 100*l.*, and you are to pay yourself 100*l.*" — "For what?" he said, interrupting me. — "For your services," I replied; "or if you demur at the principle I have chosen, accept it, because by so doing you will make Eliza and myself happy, and we can well afford it." After hesitating a moment, he said — "200*l.* a year, in addition to what I have, is too much for me: half of it is enough." — "Then give your daughters the other half, if you please, my dear and esteemed Mr. Goldsmith; but I must insist on your taking it, as you promised to comply with all I should desire." — "Thank you, my dear son," he replied; "I will not refuse it; as I perceive you are in earnest, that I should accede to your kind provision for my dear family." — "Out of which, my dear friend," I replied, "I have received the rarest jewel the sun ever shone upon. But now," I resumed, "there are one or two things more: let twelve cottages be built, at a cost of 20*l.* each; to which, attach three acres of good land, in suitable but in distant situations on the estate; and as they are finished, give them to poor industrious families, rent free the first year; but afterwards, at a rent from 1*l.* to 4*l.*, according as you can find they can afford to pay. And now, dear instructor of my youth, and father of my Eliza," continued I, "I request you to distribute, in her name, the sum of 50*l.* annually, in such sums and at such times as opportunities may present themselves, for relieving the distresses of the poor in

and about Awbury and Hartland.”—“I will do it,” he replied; “and God will bless you; and the poor will bless the name of my child, and the hand of her father commissioned to relieve them.”

During the week, my dear wife and her sisters, and Rosalie, were busied packing; and such of the plate as we thought we might require was also put up; the key of the iron chest, in which three fourths of it remained, was then given to my elder sister. The heavy trunks and packages, being completed, were then sent off to Bristol, with a letter to my uncle, requesting him to lay in our sea stores, and to purchase poultry and other fresh stock for the voyage.

On Sunday, the 24th, we as usual went to church at Awbury, where we had the pleasure to see the majestic venerable elm, so endeared from our infancy, in full foliage; and it now reminded us of our magnificent, and not less dear-silk-cotton tree, under whose hospitable shade so many happy and memorable events had taken place. After service to-day, my Eliza distributed five guineas among the poor of the village.

On Monday, she and myself entered into detail with my two elder sisters, respecting the management of Hartland in our absence. After our departure, all the servants were to be discharged, excepting the gardener and his wife, the cook, and one housemaid; and I then told my sisters that Mr. Goldsmith would pay them 100*l.* every six months, with which they were to support themselves and the house. But I now gave them 100*l.* down; and told them he would begin his payments

next Michaelmas; and that as there were two good fields attached to the mansion, besides the orchard, I wished them to purchase a couple of cows and a pillion horse. The gardener's wife would take care of the cows; and the gardener could ride before the one or the other to church, when the weather would not permit them to walk there together. They were quite satisfied with my arrangement; but hoped we would not stay long away from England. On the same day I sent forward some more things, and a couple of heavy trunks, belonging to the Rev. Mr. Rowley, accompanied by a letter to the landlord of the Tolzey, to say how many bedrooms we should want, and when he might expect us.

I had now thought it right to apprise my noble and kind friend, Lord Harrington, of my speedy departure from England, for Seaward Islands; and ventured to request a letter of introduction to the Governor of Jamaica. In conclusion, I thanked him for all his courtesies and kindnesses; and I subjoined my address at Bristol, from whence, I said, I expected to sail in a few days.

The following morning, we contrived to pack my sister Maria into our carriage, with the whole of the clergyman's family, and sent them forward. On Thursday, the 28th, dear Mr. Goldsmith and his daughters came over to Hartland; and after taking a most affectionate farewell of them and my own sisters, Eliza and myself, accompanied by Rosalie and our faithful little dog, took our places in the carriage (which had previously returned from Bristol), and left our dearest friends, and our comfortable home, to pursue the line of painful and perilous

duty, which we believed our Heavenly Father required at our hands.

On our arrival at the inn, my uncle was there to receive us: he told me the ship was ready, and all things on board, and that she would drop down to King Road to-morrow. My dear wife instantly went out to purchase such matters as Rosalie or my sister might want, accompanied by Mrs. Rowley, who bought low-heeled shoes and boots, and other articles of clothing which my Eliza pointed out to her as useful.

While they were thus engaged, I lost no time in paying my uncle for the provisions he sent out in the Mary, to meet the wants of the Germans; and every other his disbursements on my account. I then paid my passage-money to Captain Henderson, for the great cabin of the Hero; and wrote off to my bankers in London, for a statement of my account with them. I was anxious for a reply to this letter, but scarcely could expect it before we sailed. It, however, made its appearance on Monday forenoon, just as we were about to set off for embarkation; and right glad I was to see it, and to find a balance in my favour of between 4000*l.* and 5000*l.*, viz. 4503*l.* 13*s.* 6*d.*, after being debited with 1475*l.*, the amount of bills drawn since I left London, independent of the purchase-money for Hartland.

On Saturday, I had the pleasure to receive a kind letter from Lord Harrington, enclosing a private letter of introduction, under a flying seal, to Mr. Trelawney, who had been just appointed Governor of Jamaica. This mode of affixing his seal gave me an opportunity of seeing the handsome

manner he had spoken of me to his Excellency. All things were now ready, and the ship at King Road only waiting for a wind; but we were sadly afraid she might sail on the morrow, which would be Sunday; the wind, however, did not come round till the day following. Then, all was bustle: my letter from the bankers fortunately arrived amidst it all; my uncle and aunt being at the inn, to take leave of us. We were now summoned; and after a cordial embrace from each, and some tears from the old lady, which my sweet Eliza's eyes answered, we hurried off in two hired carriages, our own beings sent back to Hartland, to be put up in the coach-house; and within an hour arrived at Lamplighter's Hall, an inn pleasantly situated near the embouchure of the river Avon; and there embarking in a fine boat that was in readiness for us, we reached the ship in a short time, and got safely on board. It was nearly high water; the wind was fair and fresh, the topsails sheeted home, and the anchor a-peak. In half an hour more we were under sail, standing down Channel, with every prospect of fine weather:

CHAP. IX.

MONDAY, 2d of May, 1787.—It was some time before the hurry of our spirits subsided. As evening drew on, my dear Eliza and myself drew off from our companions towards the stern of the vessel, and there stood silently together, looking somewhat vacantly on the receding shore. A deep sigh from the bosom of my beloved awakened my attention: the image of her inestimable parent was passing across her mind, and the big tear trickled down her cheek; then, as if awaking from her reverie, she took my hand, saying, — “But you are with me! and the true and faithful One has said, ‘Lo! I am with you, even to the end of the world!’ and he never has forsaken us.” The appeal was balm to my heart; for even I was somewhat troubled at leaving England. She was thinking only of the friends she had left behind; I was considering the dangers into which I perhaps was about to plunge her and myself; and I had begun to repent that I had quitted a retreat, in which, with my ample fortune, we might have enjoyed comparative safety, and every comfort this world’s goods can bestow. The selfish principle was in full operation, so that I was neither thinking of my duty to God nor my neighbour, when she made the seasonable appeal to my better feelings. “And

thou art with me, dearest," I replied; "and our God will never leave us, nor forsake us, although I feel I am most unworthy." I told her what had been passing in my mind, which she allowed to be nothing more than natural feeling; adding, that through the influence of divine grace I soon would be again alive to the duties I was called upon to perform; and that our heavenly Father would sweeten those duties by his approval and his presence, heretofore our supreme and abiding delight; and compared with which, all other pleasures were but fleeting and joyless shadows.

Although the weather continued fine and the wind fair, the parson and his wife soon became sea-sick; Rosalie was sick also; but the two little girls, and my sister, ate and drank, and ran about cleverly. The *Hero* was a fine ship, with a poop, and a noble cabin, so that we had the most comfortable accommodation that could be desired. The wind continued fair for a week; we then had rain, and westerly winds for a day or two, and some unpleasant weather: but it again became fine, and our invalids gradually recovered their sea legs and their appetite; so that they walked the deck when it was fair, and enjoyed a good dinner every day when the dinner hour came: indeed, they who had been sea-sick made up for lee-way; their appetites being proportionally greater than ours. We had prayers in the cabin on Sunday; and on Thursday, the 12th, the ship anchored at Madeira, in Funchall Roads.

A few bales of merchandise were to be landed here, and but a few pipes of wine to be taken in.

We therefore hastened to go on shore, and visit the place, as our time would be short. The town, being built of white houses and on an acclivity, with several convents and churches raising their belfries and domes majestically above the other buildings, had an imposing appearance from the bay; and this effect was much enhanced by the magnificence of the back-ground, hills of high elevation, decorated with vineyards and lemon groves, and here and there beautified by a noble convent or a church. But, on going on shore, we found the town mean and dirty; and even the convents and churches fell far short of that elegance which their appearance at a distance had led us to expect. The day was hot, and the roads dusty; the place swarming with priests, and friars, and beggars: the priests wore black cassocks and hats. There were Franciscan friars, in black; and Dominican friars, in white, with red crosses on the breast: there were Capuchins, in coarse brown woollen; but all were tonsured and bare-headed. The beggars were dirty, and lousy, and lazy; and there was nothing beyond the novelty of the scene to entertain us. We went into a church; and certainly the first impression was imposing, — the grandeur of its columns, its marble pavement, and the brilliancy of its decorations: there were many women on their knees, dressed in black, each with a rosary in her hand. Several priests and friars were officiating at the altar, on which two colossal candles stood: a little bell frequently rang; and as often, one of the priests courtesied, or rather bobbed, before the altar, on which stood a representation of the Pas-

sion on Calvary. As the priest bobbed, the people crossed themselves : this was repeated many times while we remained. But Mr. Rowley, getting out of all patience at such mummary and prostitution of our blessed and spiritual religion, urged us to go; and accordingly we left the place.

In a few hours afterwards I met Captain Henderson, and accompanied him to the wine vaults, where his wine was filling : I here tasted some of the best white wine I had ever met with, and contrived to persuade the merchant to let me have two pipes of what he called the " Doctor ;" being of a superior quality, and kept for improving ordinary wines ; for which I paid him the large sum of 20*l.* sterling each. But, indeed, all his wines for exportation, which he called " Particular," were very far superior to the best wine sold under the name of Canary.

The next day we weighed anchor, and proceeded on our voyage. In eight or nine days more we got into the trade winds blowing from east. It was now, indeed, quite delightful ; the weather so comfortably warm ; the wind so cooling and pleasant ; the sea so smooth ; and the ship, with all her canvass spread, going along with the wind on the quarter, steadily yet swiftly. In the evening we all sat on the poop, and listened to Rosalie singing to her guitar. The sun went down, as we were thus delightfully engaged, in unclouded majesty, decorating the horizon with all the hues and brilliancy of variegated and burnished gold.

On Sabbath days Mr. Rowley read prayers on the quarter-deck, and delivered a short but im-

pressive sermon: the crew appeared serious on these occasions; and the weather being fine, and the breeze steady, nothing occurred at any time to disturb the solemnity of the meeting.

On Sunday, the 5th of June, we made the island of Antigua; and passed near enough to see its fine hills and valleys, and rich plantations. The sight of this island brought to our recollection the narrow escape the white population had last October, when that most formidable and well-concerted villainous plan was laid for blowing up all the principal people at the Government House, where a ball was to be given in celebration of His Majesty's coronation. But the Governor's son having died at St. Kitt's, that event caused the rejoicings to be put off, and the plot was discovered: in consequence, many of the conspirator negroes were put to the torture; on which one of them confessed, how that when the Government House should appear in flames, the whites in the town were to be attacked by negroes armed with cutlasses, from three different points, and men, women, and children put to the sword; while, at the same moment, all the negroes on the estates were to rise and murder the whites throughout the island. The Judge of all men hath spared you this time, good people of Antigua! — Spare your slaves; remember they are your brethren, though in bondage; that they may not again seek the blood of their oppressors. Be their masters, not their tyrants.

Our course from Antigua was nearly before the wind; which occasioned the ship to roll so much, although the sea was quite smooth, that it was im-

possible to walk the deck in any safety. The ladies were glad to put on their low-heeled shoes, and chalk them : but even with these precautions, they got an awkward lurch now and then (as the sailors term it), and sometimes an upset, so that they were glad to sit down in some secure place whenever they ventured out of the cabin ; and even there it was necessary to place covered ropes fore and aft, to prevent their falling.

On Monday, the 13th of June, we made the east end of Jamaica ; hailing again, with pleasure, the sight of those stupendous mountains we had beheld with so much admiration on our former voyage. In the evening we were becalmed off the upper White Horses ; but about seven o'clock the following morning the sea-breeze reached us, which carried us round Port Royal Point ; and brought us to an anchor off Kingston at two o'clock in the afternoon.

We had been visited by the men-of-war's guard-boat, and by the intelligence-canoe, from Kingston, before we entered the harbour ; so that it was known at the town what we were, before the ship anchored. My dear friend Drake was the first to come on board ; and so glad was I to see him, that I could scarcely withhold the impulse of throwing my arms around him. I, however, greeted him with all the demonstrations of gladness permitted to an Englishman : I shook him cordially by both his hands ; my Eliza did the same ; and I then introduced him to the Rev. Mr. Rowley and his wife, and to my sister : but Martin and Purdy, and the New England blacks, were in the boat, and, without ceremony, they had sprung on deck ; making a

party in the interview, embracing my knees, and, falling on the deck, kissing the feet of their mistress. We turned to them, and raised them, and spoke kindly to them; enquiring after their wives and their welfare. They had all a great deal to say, and each in his own way. Purdy was the same honest, funny fellow as ever: he said his wife had brought him a boy "bigger than Drake's Head."—"Do you mean the promontory?" asked my dear wife, smiling.—"Oh, no, Lady Ma'am," replied Purdy; "I only mean the Captain's head, there:" and having had his joke, he skipped off into the boat; and the others followed, after making many bows, and giving vent to their expressions of joyous welcome.

Mr. Rowley turned to me—"These are some of your people, Sir Edward: the King might envy you: it is delightful to see such love between the negro and his lord: why is it not so every where?"—"Because," I replied, "I am not their lord. I teach them, as you will teach them, that God is their Lord; and I only his servant, though their benefactor." There was some bustle upon deck at this time, clueing up the sails, which induced Captain Drake to take the ladies into the cabin; and our short dialogue being finished, we quickly followed them. After this I took Drake aside, and had some engaging conversation with him; during which, I found that the Germans were safely arrived, and were now locating themselves on George's Island; that my instructions had been punctually obeyed in all things; the guns were got, and mounted; but, by some inadvertency, the ammu-

nition had not been received from the Ordnance, for want of my receipt, which was specified in the order. "Go on shore, my good fellow," said I, "and take Mrs. White's house for us for a week, where I lodged before; and if you cannot get it, ask her to recommend you to some other: we will remain where we are until you return." Captain Drake came back in half an hour, with the agreeable intelligence that the brown lady's house was unoccupied, and that he had taken it. Dinner having been provided on board, and the sails being furled, I thought it might be just as well to dine on board, and remain until the cool of the evening. We were just going to sit down as Drake returned: he joined us at table; whence we were in no hurry to remove; but sat over our wine, and some fine fruit that had been brought on board, to a late hour in the afternoon. We then all disembarked; our boat's crew, meanwhile, having been employed in taking our light trunks, and some other things, on shore to the lodgings.

Our hostess was very glad to see us again, making many fine speeches to my wife; but when she heard Mrs. Rowley address her as her Ladyship, she cried — "High! These buccaras come back very grand, for true. I very glad, ma'am, to hear somebody call you Ladyship: you go now to Governor's ball!" So much for Mrs. White, who was as brown as gingerbread. I laughed at the *naïveté* of our hostess; and my dear sister Maria, with the eagerness of curiosity, enquired of her when the Governor's ball was to be given: but there was no ball; it was nothing more than a

phrase usual at Jamaica, signifying, "You are now above common people." Every thing around us appeared strange to the new comers; but more especially the negro population: however, our dear friends soon felt quite at their ease; the kindness and assiduity of our hostess leaving no cause for complaint. She was quite delighted to see poor Fidele again; and the dear little dog seemed to remember her. There was a room for us; one for the clergyman's family; and one for my sister and Rosalie, who had been bedfellows ever since we left England, and were much attached.

Next morning I desired Drake to equip himself in his best attire, and hire a kittereen, — a sort of one-horse chaise, — and go to Spanish Town with a despatch for the Governor. I therein enclosed the letter from Lord Harrington, and also the letter to Mrs. Trelawney which my wife brought from Mrs. Grenfield; saying, I should be happy if his Excellency would appoint an early day for me to pay my respects to him, as I intended to leave Jamaica for Seaward Islands on Tuesday next. In giving the packet to Drake, I said — "If the Governor should ask you what you are, — as I have put 'By Captain Drake' on the cover, — tell him you command my yacht: and if you have any scruple about that answer," continued I, smiling, "you shall have your commission before you go; for I have authority to grant it; and if I don't do it now, I will do it before we sail." — "Thank you, sir," said Drake; "I'll look well up, on the strength of it."

After he was gone, I had a visit from Mr. Green,

who complimented me on the honours I had received in England, and said he had been happy in executing punctually the commissions intrusted to him. I was sorry to learn from him that there was at the present time a good deal of sickness in the island, and that the small-pox, notwithstanding the late introduction of inoculation, had been very destructive among the negroes. On hearing this account, I felt grateful to God that our little colony had enjoyed, if not uninterrupted health, at least an exemption from any epidemical scourge. Before he left me, I settled his accounts for lumber and the other supplies.

Resolved to give my English friends a treat, I desired our hostess to provide us a turtle dinner; to which I invited the captain of the *Hero*. The brown lady sent up her turtle dressed in various ways, but each was excellent. We all agreed in commending the aldermanic taste, as we did justice to the feast. Captain Henderson made himself particularly agreeable on the occasion; exhibiting a vein of pleasantry and mirth he had not thought fit to open on shipboard. The day was altogether pleasant and recreating: and just before our guest took his leave, I told him I did not mean to act shabbily towards him, but, as I had another voyage, although a short one, instantly to perform, I stood in need of our stock and poultry left on board the *Hero*; and as they were there, I would not think of purchasing any other, but would make him a compensation in money, if he desired it. "Certainly not," he replied; "I lived at your table all the way out; you paid me handsomely for the cabin: do not

leave a feather; I do not expect it." This was generous, and I took him at his word; feeling that it was but right. Next morning Martin was ordered to remove two sheep, and some fine fowls, from the *Hero* into the schooner.

Just as we were thinking of retiring to rest, Drake made his appearance. He brought a letter for me, and another for Lady Seaward. "Well, Drake," said I, before I broke the seal, "what sort of a reception had you?" — "The Governor was truly kind to me, indeed, sir," he replied: "he instantly desired me to stay and dine with him; saying, I might take the answers to your packet after dinner." — "Well, that was civil indeed!" said I. I now opened the Governor's letter, in which he expressed his earnest wish to see us at the Government House as soon as possible; and as he understood from Captain Drake that I had no carriage with me, he would send us his own, as soon as he knew when he might expect the honour of our visit. Mrs. Trelawney's letter to my wife was to the same effect. Drake told us the Governor asked a thousand questions about the settlement; and it was a long time before he could be made to comprehend where it was: he had never heard of it before. "Nor Governor Ascough," I replied, "I dare say, who signed my commission." It was now quite time to go to bed; so I made our friend take some weak brandy and water, in haste, saying — "When we go to St. George's Island, I won't put you off this way; we will then have a cigar together: but I have not smoked since we last met."

Early next day I sent off a messenger with letters

to Government House; in which I said we would avail ourselves of the Governor's carriage, and requested to have it before daylight the following morning, so as to arrive at Spanish Town before the heat of the day: the distance being only thirteen miles, I knew we could do it very well before breakfast. Drake came to me just as the messenger left me: I then gave him instructions to get our heavy trunks, and packages of furniture, and supplies, also the two pipes of Madeira wine, out of the *Hero* into the schooner; and to drop down to the Ordnance wharf in the Lagoon, where he was to present my receipt, and there take in 500 cannon shot, and twelve barrels of gunpowder. "After you return," said I, "you are to make my lodgings your home; where I expect you will render every assistance in your power to the parson, and to the ladies, during our absence."

The Governor's carriage was at the door, a little after daylight on Friday morning. My dear wife and myself stepped in, followed by Rosalie, a trunk, a wig-box, and a band-box. Our postilion was black as jet; and there were two negro footmen behind, not very elegant in their apparel: however, we got on at a good pace; arriving at Spanish Town in about an hour and a half. Mr. and Mrs. Trelawney and secretary were in the breakfast-room, ready to receive us. There was no ceremony, but the proffered hand, with "We are very glad to see you; we hope you had a pleasant ride; the morning has been delightfully cool." Our reply was in unison with our reception: — "We enjoyed our ride very much: we are indebted to you, for so kindly send-

ing your carriage for us." Breakfast was soon brought in ; during which, we conversed on light and trivial subjects. After it was over, the secretary left us : the Governor and myself, retiring to a balcony on the west side of the house, walked in the shade, conversing on matters of business.

We touched slightly on the subject of the commission I had received two years ago : I then gave him an outline of the circumstances which had taken me to the islands, and brought them under the notice of the Crown ; I pointed out the importance of their situation in the event of a Spanish war, and related to him my conversation with General Grenfield. He replied, it was most extraordinary that the place had not been seized long ago, either by us or by the Spaniards. I told him, it was not at all extraordinary ; for it was so beset with shoals and reefs, for thirty or forty miles round, in almost every direction, that unless a local knowledge had been first acquired, by accident or otherwise, every vessel, on perceiving the breakers, would haul out of the way, and never have a chance of seeing, much less of making their way to the islands. We then talked a good deal about His Majesty's escape, near Helvoetsluys ; of the marriage of the Prince of Wales ; of the coolness between him and the King ; of the excellency of the Queen's government during the absence of His Majesty ; of Sir Robert Walpole ; of the haughty and unprincipled conduct of Spain ; and various other topics of high and general interest. He then made many observations about the Maroons, their daring conduct, and the great diffi-

culty he would have in bringing them into subjection; hinting, at the same time, that I might serve him essentially, if I could procure about 200 Indians from the Mosquito shore, to assist in hunting them down. I replied, that as yet I was a perfect stranger to the Mosquito Indians; but, if he would give me written instructions, I would send Captain Drake, in my schooner, to carry them into effect; and I was sure, he would do it, if practicable. "Drake is a fine fellow," said I: "he served his time in the navy: for lieutenant, but has not obtained promotion; he has been in my service nearly two years, and never made a difficulty in any business on which I have had occasion to employ him." — "That's the sort of spirit I like," said Mr. Trelawney. "We will talk this matter over by-and-by, in detail; and, if agreeable to you, I should wish to see Mr. Drake again before you sail. I was much pleased with him," continued the Governor, "the day he dined here: he spoke of you in a way that gave me a very favourable opinion of his gratitude, yet manly independence."

"I'll tell you what, Sir Edward," resumed Mr. Trelawney, after some pause; "you stand well with the ministry: they will not refuse you a small favour. It is come into my mind, that we can prevail on the Commander-in-Chief here, to take your yacht in on the list of the navy, and give an order to Mr. Drake to act as lieutenant in command of her. If we can accomplish this, your interest at home can very easily get the act confirmed. It will serve him, and it will save you a vast expense; the vessel will be refitted at

the dock-yard here, and stores allowed, and Mr. Drake will have lieutenant's pay." I thanked him most sincerely for the suggestion; which appeared to me of such importance, that I said I should like to set about it immediately. He agreed to my proposition; and we walked directly from the balcony to the library. He there instantly sat down, and wrote a letter to the Commodore. "Now," said he, "if you have no objection, copy that, with any alterations you please; sign it, and direct it: and I will write another from myself to the same effect; and we shall see what can be done." These letters set forth the advantage that would accrue to His Majesty's service, by commissioning the yacht employed by the Governor of Seaward Islands; and recommending Mr. Francis Drake to command her, who had served the required time in the navy for a commission as lieutenant; the projected service on the Mosquito shore being introduced as a special reason for the request. These letters were then sealed, and sent off to the Commodore. In the evening, a short but friendly reply was received from Commodore Gunman, saying, he would come to Government House to-morrow and talk over the business, for he was at a loss how to act. He did not wish to disoblige the Governor of Jamaica; but he was rather afraid to comply with the request.

But to return: after the letters were despatched to the Admiral, Mr. Trelawney entered fully on the subject of Spanish depredations; and expressed a wish that I would keep a look out on the Spaniards, and get all the information I could. Then,

adverting to something Sir Robert Walpole had said, about the probability of employing me on some service on the Spanish Main, he thought it might be well for me by-and-by to visit Santa Martha, and some other of the principal places: and he hoped I would keep up a regular communication with him on all these subjects; adding, that he would state these views in his first despatches to England. So he was certain, that his representations and my own interest must secure the object in hand respecting the yacht: indeed, he thought government would purchase the vessel, if I chose to ask it. But I immediately rejected this idea, saying, I should be too glad to accomplish the arrangements proposed, without asking any thing more.

We joined the ladies a little after noontide. My dear wife had charmed Mrs. Trelawney not a little: they had talked much of Mrs. Grenfield; and, with a pardonable vanity, my Eliza had shown her the Queen's letters. Immediately on our going into the saloon where they were, Mrs. Trelawney said — "My dear Lady Seaward, you must show my husband the letters of our most excellent Queen; she is a divine woman." My dear wife, without any hesitation, put them into Mrs. Trelawney's hand, who gave them to the Governor. He read them without any comment, and presented them to their owner, saying — "Your Ladyship may be justly proud of the friendship of Her Majesty:" then turning to me, he said — "You have not told me any thing about these Germans." I then related the business to him from beginning to end:

on which he remarked, that there was negligence somewhere; for that he was not informed of their having been at Port Royal.

We now retired to lounge away an hour in the heat of the day in our bedroom, and to dress for dinner. My dear wife and myself then talked over the heads of our conversations with the Governor and his wife; and it delighted her to hear that Drake was likely to get a commission as lieutenant in the navy, and our schooner to be made a King's vessel. I then went into an adjoining apartment to change my dress, having had on my plain suit in the morning, but I now put on my embroidered velvet. Rosalie was in attendance to assist her mistress, who dressed in the white satin, with hat and feathers, and pearls, just as when she paid her first respects to the Queen.

On coming into the drawing-room, Mr. and Mrs. Trelawney, Doctor Kane, and the secretary, were already there; and soon after, Colonel and Mrs. Wilkinson, and Sir Charles and Lady Price, were announced. These people were all remarkably well bred, courteous, and free from untravelled stiffness, and all ill-concerted ceremony. We therefore conversed with every one by turns in the most unrestrained and agreeable manner; and I could not but envy the elegant manners of Sir Charles Price, who by his affability and great information raised himself high in my estimation. The dinner was neat but not sumptuous, the wines excellent, and the conversation highly instructive, lively, and agreeable. Coffee was served early, followed by liqueurs. During the evening's conversation, Sir

Charles and Lady Price invited us to visit them at the Decoy, a fine and beautifully ornamented estate on the northern side of the island; but we could not make a promise to do so. Between eight and nine o'clock the company took their leave.

After they were gone, the Governor opened the Commodore's note, which he read to me. "Now," said he, "I will not ask any one to dinner to-morrow. The old boy hates a large party, which he designates a mob: so we will sit down as we are; and, by being alone, there will be a fair opportunity to talk him over, if it should be required."

Early the next morning, Mrs. Trelawney took my wife and Rosalie out in the carriage, to enjoy the cool air, and make a little excursion into the country along the banks of the Rio Cobre. Mrs. Trelawney had heard Rosalie's history from Lady Seaward; and being a good French scholar, took much delight in conversing with her; the fashions in Paris, and London, forming no small part of their chit-chat during the ride.

The Commodore arrived about one o'clock, accompanied by his secretary, who, it seems, lives with him at a penn, allowed by the Island of Jamaica for his shore residence. Mr. Trelawney introduced me to him. "I am very glad to see you, Sir Edward Seaward," said he; "but I fear you want to get me into a scrape with the Admiralty." — "That is far from my wish, sir," I replied; "if you and the Governor of Jamaica do not think the measure called for, as necessary for the good of His Majesty's service, I should not deserve His

Majesty's commission and confidence, were I to urge it." — "Why did you not apply to the Admiralty," said he, "before you left England? then I should not have been placed in a cleft stick, between their Lordships and my friend the Governor here." To use a seaman's phrase, I was taken rather aback by this unexpected question. Mr. Trelawney looked at me, and I looked at the Commodore. "I am surprised, sir," said I at last, "that you could suppose I would forget myself so much, as to put such a slight upon the Commander-in-Chief on this station, even if I had contemplated the measure before I left England. But the truth is, that the necessity of it has only become apparent to his Excellency and myself since we have had some conversation here on our relations with the Spaniards, and the part I may be called upon to act after my return to Seaward Islands." — "Well, then, gentlemen," he replied, "we will adjourn to the library, and put this business in an official form; and I will see what can be done." We accordingly retired; the Commodore taking with him his secretary. Our letters were then rewritten, making the representations more full and the request more pressing; and the Commodore being satisfied with them, promised to comply with their requests; at the same time desiring the secretary to make out an order for three of the captains of the squadron, to examine Mr. Francis Drake as touching his qualification for lieutenant; which order was made out instantly, and handed to me. "Now," said the Commodore, "as soon as Mr. Drake passes his examination, I will give him an acting

commission as lieutenant; with an order to hoist his pendant in the Porghee. Your yacht, which, you say, is a fine new Bermudian schooner, will then be taken into the service; a midshipman, and twelve men, and four guns, shall be allowed: but whether this will be ratified or annulled by the Admiralty, must depend entirely on the interest you, or your friend the Governor there, can make in England; he is a great favourite with Sir Charles Wager." — "The measure requires no interest to confirm it," replied Mr. Trelawney; "it is of too much importance in its application, to want backing at home." — "I lay you 5*l.*," said the Commodore, roundly, "if the measure is not well backed by influence at home, that I shall get a severe rap over the knuckles for the good of the service." — "Well, well," rejoined his Excellency, "don't be uneasy on that score: Sir Edward Seaward has interest enough at Court to make half a dozen post captains, if it were required; therefore we need not be in doubt about his getting a poor dog of a lieutenant confirmed." — "I am afraid," said I, "your Excellency far over-rates my influence; I will, however, hope it is sufficient for the present occasion." — "Ah! that's all we want now," replied the Commodore; "let him bottle up his interest for making post captains, to another occasion. And now," resumed the old son of Neptune, "that our business is brought to a close, and I am half broiled by the sun in riding over here, I will thank you for a glass of *sangaree*, or *sangarorum*, if you please." Having said this, he shook up his waist-coat, to cool himself; adding, "By-and-by I will

go and change my shirt, and cool my coat and waistcoat, and wig; and when I put them on again, I shall be dressed for dinner."

I lost no time in writing to Drake; telling him what had been accomplished, desiring him to take the earliest opportunity of thanking the Governor. I also enclosed the order, directed to the three captains of the squadron before whom he was to pass his examination; and expressed my great joy in making a communication to him so promising to his prospects. I directed him to get the thing gone through on Monday, if possible; and then wait on the Commodore's secretary with the certificate: on presenting which he would receive his commission, with instructions to take in guns and a crew for the schooner. I added, that Mr. Dilke, the present mate, should be borne as midshipman. And I requested he would immediately desire Mr. Finn to look out for another schooner, which must be purchased for my brother, and into which, for the present, we might turn over our own crew. I also bade him tell our friends, that this business most likely would detain us a week longer than I had anticipated. I then despatched my letter; and joined my dear wife, who was dressing for dinner, and who was most happy to hear of all that I had done.

At dinner, the Commodore was remarkably gallant to the ladies. It appears that all sailors look up to women of virtue and good breeding as a sort of deities: there is nothing they would not do to please or gratify them. "You shall have a sloop of war," said he to Lady Seaward, "to accompany you. I will send the Honourable Captain Townshend, Sir

Robert Walpole's nephew, in the Shark, to escort you. You might, perhaps, find better accommodation in it than in Sir Edward's yacht: though, indeed, we are going to make a man-of-war of her." My dear wife thanked him with that sincerity which gives a sterling value to acknowledgments of kindness; but she said she would prefer going in the schooner — the accommodations being sufficiently good, and, as the navigation was extremely dangerous among the reefs, she should feel more safe. — "Indeed, sir," continued she, "if you would send the sloop of war merely to honour us, I feel I ought to endeavour to dissuade you from it, lest any accident might happen to it. But if you think it right to make some of your squadron acquainted with the place, there cannot be a better opportunity than the present: for I am sure, if your captain will follow in the track of the schooner, no danger can occur; and Sir Edward will take care that the pilot boat shall see him clear of all danger in returning." — "Well said, my little Queen!" exclaimed the old boy; "the Shark shall be sent, then, on His Majesty's service; and you shall guarantee her safety." — "Against all negligence on our part," replied my wife. "On our part!" re-echoed the Commodore; "now, I like that," continued he, "that's all one as a timber head in the ship; — you are well mated, Sir Edward!" The Commodore had said a good thing; so he laughed heartily, and enjoyed it.

Immediately after breakfast on the following day, which was Sunday, Commodore Gunman left us; and soon after his departure we went to church.

with the Governor and his family. There were few people there, excepting the military; with whom it was nearly filled. After church, Sir Charles and Lady Price called at Government House; and they again pressed us to visit the Decoy. In so hospitable and noble a manner was this invitation given and pressed upon us, that my dear wife thought it right to tell her Ladyship we would be most happy to accept it; but that the clergyman and his wife, who were going with us to Seaward Islands, together with a sister of her husband, were staying at Kingston waiting our return, which they were led now hourly to expect: but as circumstances had arisen that would delay us another fortnight, if Sir Charles and she would receive us all for a few days, we should be most happy to visit the Decoy. Lady Price in a moment met the proposal in the kindest manner, and said she would send a carriage for them. My Eliza fixed Tuesday morning, at daylight; and it was settled with Mrs. Trelawney that they should spend that day at Government House, and proceed the next morning. Sir Charles had a house in Spanish Town; to which he invited Mr. and Mrs. Trelawney, and ourselves, to dine *en famille* the following day.

Letters were sent off on Monday morning to Mr. and Mrs. Rowley and to my sister, informing them of our wish for them to join us at Spanish Town, and thence to pass a few days in the country with us, until we should be ready to sail. I also apprised them that Sir Charles Price's carriage would come for them at daylight the next morning. We had

the honour this day to dine with the worthy Baronet. His dinner-table was magnificently arranged, with a complete service of silver gilt plate. A fine full length portrait of His Majesty hung at one end of the saloon: and every thing that hospitality and elegance could contribute, attended us while under his roof this day.

On Tuesday morning, our friends arrived to breakfast; and met with a kind and gracious reception from the Governor and his lady. Our first enquiry was about Drake. They had not brought any letter from him; but informed me he was to go to Greenwich this morning to present himself before the passing captains. And he had desired Mr. Rowley to say, that, as soon as the thing was over, he would post off to Spanish Town, to pay his respects to Governor Trelawney and to myself. And sure enough, a little before the dinner-time, he made his appearance; and in his old midshipman's uniform, to our no small amusement. He came in with an honest smile on his face. "Your Excellency will excuse my being so badly rigged," said he, "but I thought it better to make sail as I was, and return you my best thanks for this commission, (taking it out of his pocket, and holding it in his hand,) which it had always been my proudest wish to attain; and now having got it, I hope I shall not disgrace it." I shook him warmly by the hand; and after Mr. Trelawney had paid him a suitable compliment, in return for what he had said, he cordially invited him to dinner. Drake begged to be excused; said, he must return immediately, having so much to do; but if he could speak to Sir Ed-

ward for half an hour, he should be happy during that time to take a biscuit and a glass of sangaree. We then had permission to retire; which opportunity Drake eagerly seized to take me by both my hands, and tell me how much he was overjoyed, how deeply he felt my kindness, and how proud the business altogether had made him feel. Some slices of cold ham and sangaree were brought in: I then desired him to occupy his mouth otherwise than in talking; and while he refreshed himself, I would sit down and write a string of memoranda for his guidance. I did this; and then took another sheet of paper, and drew out a set of bills of exchange on London for 100*l*. "Here, Drake," said I, "here are the memoranda, containing the outline of all I wish: you must fill up the detail yourself. But I am now desirous to pay a debt: here are the 100 dollars I promised you, when I left Jamaica for England: and do not marvel if you find every dollar a pound; for it is my pleasure to make it so." He took the papers — he looked at them — then at me — he then looked at them again; I saw his lip falter, and a tear come in his eye. He put them in his pocket, saying — "Thank you, sir!" at the same time holding out his hand, with which he grasped mine in a manner that spoke more eloquently than the tongue could speak: in fact, he was not able to speak. He then made his way out of the house, and departed without any more ceremony.

Sir Charles and Lady Price had gone to the Decoy; and our friends set off thither by daylight next morning, with letters from us. My dear wife

remained with Mrs. Trelawney; but the Governor and myself went to Greenwich, to pay our respects to the Commodore at his penn. "I like our new lieutenant," said the old gentleman, as we entered; "he is a sailor every inch of him; and I have no doubt will make a good officer: I like his name, too," continued he; "another Sir Francis Drake belike, before he pops off; who knows?" We thanked the Commodore severally for his conduct in the affair; and I told him I would immediately write letters to Sir Robert Walpole and to Lord Harrington; and Lady Seaward would write one to the Queen also, to request that the commission might be confirmed. "That will clinch the business," he replied: "Her Majesty knows how to get the weather-gage of the Admiralty, if required."

After breakfast the Commodore told me he understood there were twelve barrels of gunpowder going in the Porghee from the Ordnance, for the use of a battery at Seaward Islands; adding, he would order the Shark to take the powder into her magazine; for it would be a dangerous shipmate stowed in the hold of any vessel. "But I hope," continued he, "you will soon be ready, for I shall want the sloop of war back as quickly as possible. An officer will be sent in her, to make a survey of your reefs and islands, which I intend to transmit to the Admiralty." — I assured him every possible despatch should be made, as far as depended on us; and that I would let him know by the end of the week on what day I could be ready.

As we were not far from Kingston, Mr. Trelaw-

ney was so kind as to comply with my wish to drive there, that I might see Mr. Drake, to make some new arrangements with him, in consequence of the Commodore's anxiety that there should not be any delay in sailing. We got quietly to my lodging, without the Governor being recognised. It was then agreed we should dine here, and return to Spanish Town in the cool of the evening. As soon as I could get hold of Drake, I told him of the Commodore's wish; and that in, consequence, the business of my brother's schooner must be left for the present. I then proposed sailing with our own crew, and said he might come back with or without my brother, as he pleased; when he could turn over our crew to the new schooner, and get the *Porghee* properly fitted at the King's yard, and take in the man of war's men and the guns. "I think, Sir Edward," returned he, "that will be our best plan; and in that case we can sail on Monday." I invited him to dine, but he said he had too much duty to do, so he took his leave, having come to an understanding that our departure was fixed for Monday morning; so I immediately sat down, and wrote a note to the Commodore to that effect.

Mrs. White soon discovered she had the honour of having the Governor of Jamaica in her house; and as she excelled in making a pepper pot, to which his Excellency was known to be partial, she put forth her best efforts to deserve his commendations, and she received them. A little after sunset we got into the carriage, and reached Government-house before nine o'clock. Mr. Trelawney entertained the ladies with an account of all our pro-

ceedings; among which was the brown lady's pepper pot, with the great respect we paid to her and it.

On Thursday morning we set off for the Decoy, in a light carriage belonging to the Governor, which he politely desired us to detain at the foot of the hills, in Sir Charles's keep, until our return, which was fixed for Saturday; at the same time requesting the whole party might dine at Government House, on our way back to Kingston. But this last kind request I was obliged to decline; stating, that we should wish to get home as soon as possible on Saturday, to complete our arrangements for sailing on Monday; that nothing might be left to be done on the Sabbath-day.—The morning was cool, and the open carriage delightful. Rosalie was enchanted at her drive, and the many curious objects that presented themselves on the way. She had been quite idolised at Government House; so that she could not help acknowledging how much happier she had been in Jamaica than ever she was in England; the people were so like the French;—*“point de tout taciturne et beaucoup de politesse.”* Our route was nearly north for about twelve or thirteen miles, through St. Thomas in the Vale, along or near the course of the Rio Cobre. We then quitted our carriage, and commenced the ascent of the mountain range, on mules and horses that were ready waiting our arrival; attended by a numerous escort of servants, who carried our trunks and band-boxes on their heads, making altogether an extended line, which reminded us of the description of an eastern caravan, winding its way along

the steep sides of the Persian hills, in their progress from Bagdat to Samarcand, as we read in Arabian story-books. Having gained the summit of the hills, we descried the sea that bounds the island on the north, with a beautiful and highly cultivated valley lying between.

On our arrival at the Decoy, we were most hospitably received by its noble proprietor. Our dear friends, also, were most happy to meet us again; for a few days of separation, in a strange land appears an age. After resting, and dressing, and dining, we walked out, in the cool of the evening, to view the beautiful fountains and groves with which the taste and opulence of the possessor had decorated this delightful place. Sir Charles told me we were now at an elevation of 2000 feet above the level of the sea: that the Rio Nuevo takes its rise here, from the fine piece of water in front of his house; a little Nubian lake: but, in truth, all around appeared more like some fabled residence of Genii than the actual residence of men — the varied avenues of tropical trees, intersected by arches, terminating in temples or in orange groves. The long lines of plantain walks, relieved by clumps of the ornamental cabbage palm — the fine piece of water — the clear sky — the cool atmosphere — the extended and beautiful landscape — the interminable ocean in the distance — altogether contributed to make an impression scarcely to be imagined, but never to be forgotten.

My dear wife and myself dedicated part of Friday to writing our letters to Her Majesty, and to Sir Robert Walpole and Lord Harrington. She

pleaded for the man who had conveyed the Germans to Seaward Islands; and who had been indefatigable in settling them comfortably there; a detail of which she soon hoped to have the honour of communicating; she even ventured to speak of his merits, and make an allusion to his illustrious name, but confessed that her only hope arose out of Her Majesty's great kindness and favour. — I took up the subject in a very different way to the minister. The benefit that would result to His Majesty's service, the honour it would confer on myself, the facility it would afford me of carrying the Governor of Jamaica's wishes into execution with respect to the Mosquito Indians; and, moreover, the expediency of my vessel being enrolled with His Majesty's navy, and commanded by a King's officer, if I were to hold any official intercourse at any time with the governors or other officers belonging to Spain. And, finally, I requested, as a personal favour, that he would direct the Lords of the Admiralty to confirm Lieutenant Drake's commission: but to my Lord Harrington I only pleaded the wishes of a friend.

We remained at this enchanting spot until early on Saturday morning; when, yielding to my earnest representations, Sir Charles allowed us to depart; carrying along with us a deep impression of agreeable and grateful recollections. We then returned in the same manner that we came, merely resting ourselves and horses for a few hours at Spanish Town; but during this short stay at Government House, my dear wife and Mrs. Trelawney talked over all that was wonderful and delightful at the Decoy,

while I profited by the opportunity to put into the Governor's hands the letters we had written there. On perusing them, he said, they would certainly accomplish the end in view; but that he would write also on the subject, and forward all the letters together: we then proceeded to Kingston, where we arrived late in the afternoon. I ordered the servants to put up the horses for the night where they would have the best care taken of them; then, giving them money, dismissed them, with a kind message to their respective masters.

Drake soon joined us, with a satisfactory detail of all he had been doing; every thing was on board, and he had taken care to provide a large quantity of fine fruit. He had also duly paid his respects to Captain Townshend of the *Shark*, who was now at anchor off Port Royal, waiting to join us on Monday morning. Having little ourselves to do, we finished it in the course of the evening, and retired early to rest.

The following day, being the Sabbath, we all prepared to go to church. Drake appeared at the breakfast table in a new suit of lieutenant's uniform, attended by Martin and Purdy, and the two new England blacks, in white jackets and trousers. We congratulated our friend on the occasion; in which our faithful servants joined us, with a profusion of good wishes for their captain, and for their kind master, whom, they rejoiced to hear, King George had made Governor; "the same like Governor of Jamaica, and their good lady, Lady Governor too!"

We made a sort of procession to the church, there

being eight of us, followed by Drake and his four men. Many of the people were more intent on looking at this novel sight, than at their prayer books; it being known to some who we were; and some strange and extravagant stories having been circulated respecting us, excited curiosity. There being no service at Kingston church in the afternoon, Mr. Rowley gave us prayers at home; and some of our men were present, the New Englanders having relieved John and Harry, the morning ship-keepers. Their new pastor was much pleased with their demeanour and attention on the occasion. After prayers my dear wife and myself retired to our room, and wrote letters to Awbury and to Hartland, with an account of our safe arrival, and the pleasant manner in which we had passed our time at Jamaica; and that to-morrow we should sail for Seaward Islands.

We rose before daylight on Monday, and found our crew in readiness to take the trunks and boxes to the vessel. In their absence we had breakfast; and I then paid our hostess out of my bag of dollars I brought from London. The Porghee's boat not being large enough to stow us all comfortably at once, I requested Mr. and Mrs. Rowley to take their children, and go with Captain Drake, who had now come up to escort us, which they did. In half an hour he returned: then giving my sister Maria his arm, led the way. We followed, having Rosalie on one side, and our dear little Fidele on the other; and soon arrived at the place of embarkation. Here I stopped a moment, to speak to Mr. Green and Mr. Finn, who were waiting my coming: then

stepping into the boat, where my companions were already seated, we rowed off towards the schooner.

She had been recently painted; her colours were hoisted, and the pendant, incident to her having been made a King's vessel, was just beginning to stream out on the first of the sea breeze. "She looks well, my friend Drake," said I; "you are entitled to my best thanks:"—we soon got on board. The decks were clean and clear; nothing in the way beyond the two hen-coops abaft, and the two wedder sheep taken out of the Hero, that were to be removed into the boats as soon as stowed. The anchor was quickly up, and about half-past nine o'clock we hove to off Port Royal, on the Shark's quarter. Her topsails were sheeted home, and she was ready to weigh:—Captain Townshend, however, came immediately on board the Porghee, to pay his respects to me; and that ceremony being ended, he returned on board, and in five minutes after, his brig was under sail, standing out to sea, the schooner keeping in his wake.

It was a delightful day, the weather fine, and the breeze steady; so we went cheerily along. On Wednesday, at noon, the colour of the water altered a little; and soon after, some breakers were discovered from the mast-head. Drake then hailed the Shark, requesting Captain Townshend to drop astern about a quarter of a mile, and keep in the Porghee's wake, on which we stood in boldly towards the breakers; knowing there was deep water close alongside of them, and when nigh enough, that he could run down with a flowing sheet. But when we drew near, Captain Townshend became

alarmed, and made a whiff in his ensign; which was a signal to speak us. We hove-to for an instant; when he hailed us, saying "he could see nothing but breakers, and no land, and that he was afraid both vessels would be lost."—Drake replied, "There was no fear: the water was deep all along outside the reefs; and they must follow the schooner with confidence." We filled again, and stood on to the westward. About three o'clock we saw the north end of St. George's Island, and the reef trending here to the southward; we then gradually altered our course, and a little before four o'clock opened the channel; when the promontory, which we had called Drake's Head, became discernible. We now crowded sail, and hoisted our colours, the *Shark* following our example. Drake had put up a flag-staff on the northern summit of George's Island; from whence we were now descried by the look-out, and their union jack hoisted. As we approached, the colours on the promontory went up, accompanied by a gun. Our friends on board were now in high spirits, seeing these demonstrations of our home being near; but the hearts of Eliza and myself were too full for speech; stretching themselves, as it were, to the shore, where so many affectionate but humble human beings (our fellow-creatures) were waiting anxiously to bless our return, as the agents of Heaven, for their safety and happiness.

END OF THE SECOND VOLUME.

LONDON :
Printed by A. & R. Spottiswoode,
New-Street-Square.

